



D. Loggan del. 1684.

G. Virtue Sculp.



D. Loggan del. 1684.

G. Virtue Sculp.

A  
T R E A T I S E  
CONCERNING  
ETERNAL and IMMUTABLE  
M O R A L I T Y.

---

By *RALPH CUDWORTH, D.D.*  
Formerly Master of *Christ's College* in *Cambridge.*

---

With A P R E F A C E by the Right  
Reverend Father in GOD,  
*EDWARD* Lord Bishop of *DURHAM.*

---

L O N D O N:

Printed for *JAMES and JOHN KNAPTON,*  
at the *Crown* in *St. Paul's Church-yard.*

M,DCC,XXXI.



THE

# PREFACE



THE Author of the follow-  
ing Discourse was the very  
Rev. Dr. Bishop Crag-  
g, whose Name is to

well known to them that are  
acquainted with the Rev. Dr. Cragg,  
either in reputation or by his Preach-  
es. This Piece, though it may be  
by the same Person that wrote the former  
Treatise, yet differs in the following  
Particulars, partly by the Author  
a nice Skill in the way of the former  
Treatise, and passing longer to a  
clear and forcible Argument in inde-  
pendency of the old and popular  
Assumption to study the  
best way to live well for

A



# THE PREFACE.



HE Author of the following Treatise was the very learned Dr. *Ralph Cudworth*, whose Name is so well known to them that are acquainted with the best Authors, as to render it needless to say more in behalf of this Piece, than that it was composed by the same Person, that writ the *True Intellectual System of the Universe*. This Author, being early prepared with a nice Skill in most of the learned Languages, and having joined to a clear and solid judgment an indefatigable application to Study, began soon to form vast designs for

iv *The P R E F A C E.*

the service of Religion: and in subserviency thereto to reduced his large treasure of learning to proper heads or subjects, which he purposed one time or other to improve into compleat discourses.

He lived in an Age, when the disputes concerning *Liberty* and *Necessity*, mingling with the Political schemes of the Leaders of opposite Parties, help'd to cause strong convulsions in the State, and to spread no less fatal an influence upon the principles and manners of the generality of People. For Debauchery, Scepticism and Infidelity, as \* he complains, flourished in his time, and grew up, in his opinion, from the Doctrine of the Fatal Necessity of all Actions and Events, as from its proper root †.

\* Ep. Dedicatory before his *Intellectual System*.  
† Preface to the *Intellect. System*.

Such

## The PREFACE. v

Such a Belief, upon whatsoever grounds or principles maintained, as *he* conceived, did serve the design of Atheism and undermine Christianity and all Religion; as taking away all guilt and blame, punishments and rewards: and plainly rendered a day of judgment ridiculous. And *he* thought it evident, that *some* in *those* days pursued *those* notions, in order to that end.

THESE Sentiments disposed him to bend much of his Study this way, and to read over all the antient Philosophers and Moralists, which *he* did with great accuracy. He then set himself to gather and answer all the antient and modern arguments, for the necessity of all Actions, which had been maintained by several Persons, upon very different grounds. And many of his collections of this kind still re-

## vij The PREFACE.

main, as so many monuments of his copious Reading, judgment and industry.

He accordingly distinguished three sorts of Fatality, that he might treat of each apart. First *Natural* or *Material*, which excluding God out of the scheme, and supposing senseless matter necessarily moved, to be the first principle and cause of all things, is truly and properly the *Atheistical* Fate. This he found defended by *Epicurus* of old, and to refute him and the other Assertors of the Atomick material necessity, he published his learned and unanswerable book, which he entitled the *Intellectual System of the Universe*.

Secondly, *Theologick* or *Divine* Fate, which indeed allows in words the existence of that perfect Intellectual Being, distinct from matter, whom

## The PREFACE vij

whom we call God : yet affirming that God irrespectively decrees and determines all things, evil as well as good, doth in effect make all actions alike necessary to us. In consequence whereof, God's will is not regulated by his essential and immutable Goodness and Justice: God is a mere arbitrary will omnipotent: and in respect to us, morally good and evil are positive things, and not so in their own nature, that is, things are good or bad because they are commanded or forbidden, and that which is known good might have been bad, and bad good, if the pure will of God at first had not determin'd them to be what they are at present.

3. The Stoical Fate, which constrains also the natural and moral actions of the Universe, and makes necessity to be so intrinsecal to the

vij **The PREFACE.**

nature of every thing, as that no being nor action could possibly be otherwise than it is. For all things, according to this notion, depend in a chain of causes. All in themselves necessary, from the first principle of Being, who preordained every event before it fell out, so as to leave no room to liberty or Contingency any where in the World.

THESE two last hypotheses of Fatalism were but lightly touch'd in his *Intellectual System*, because he intended to give them a more particular and more ample consideration: however, ill health, a short life, or other reasons we know not, hindered him from finishing what the world earnestly expected, and no one that survived him was able to supply.

IT is probable, that foreseeing the length of the work, and some of the hindrances, that afterwards fell

into

out

## THE PREFACE. ix

out to retard and defeat it, he thought it best to contract his Undertaking, and to treat in smaller volumes of those points that he judged to be most material and principal in this controversy.

In this view he drew up the Book, with which the world is now presented, wherein he proves the falseness of the consequences with respect to natural justice and morality in God, which are deducible from the principles of those that maintain the second sort of Fate, denominated by him Theologick. And thus it may be reckon'd to be a sequel in part, of his first book against material Fate. Had it come abroad as early as it was written, it had served for a proper Antidote to the poison in some of Mr. Hobbes's and other's writings, who revived in that Age the exploded opinions of *Protagoras* and *Jugurtha*.

## ix The PREFACE

other antient Greeks, and took away the essential and eternal discrimination of moral good and evil, of just and unjust, and made them all arbitrary productions of divine or human will.

AGAINST the antient and modern Patrons of this doctrine no one hath writ better than Dr. Cudworth: His book is indeed a Demonstration of the truth of the contrary opinion; and is drawn up with that beauty, clearness and strength, as must delight as well as convince the Reader, if I may judge of the Affection of others, from the effect it had on me. It will certainly give a just idea of the writer's good sense, as well as vast learning.

WE are not certain that this Treatise is quite so perfect as the Author design'd it; but it appears from the MS. that he transcribed

the book

the

THE PREFACE. xi

the best part of it with his own hand, as if it was speedily to have been sent to the pres.

His Death following not long after, This, with several other Manuscripts, were lock'd up from the Sight of the world for many years, and at last came into the Hands of his Grandson *Francis Cudworth Masham Esq;* one of the Masters in *Chancery*, whose Temper is too beneficent and communicative to deprive the Publick any longer of a Work that promises much benefit to it.

It is well known, that the loose principles, with regard to morality, that are opposed in this book, are defended by too many in our time. It is hoped also that the new controversies springing up, that have some relation to this subject, may be cleared and shortned by the reasons herein proposed. However that be, a book

xij *The PREFACE.*

a book of found sense and true learning is, at all times in fashion: and if any the least *Good* shall follow, as there may much *Good* from the publication of it; or if even the memory of so great a man in all parts of learning divine and human, who was an honour to *Emanuel College*, where he was educated, and to *Christ's College*, where he afterwards presided, and indeed to the whole *University of Cambridge*, which he adorned, shall by these means be revived and perpetuated, it cannot be said to be publish'd unseasonably.

*E. DURESMÉ.*

*Cap. II.*

**T H E**

## THE PREFACE

---

# CONTENTS.

### BOOK I. CHAP. I.

**T**HAT there have been some in all Ages, who have maintained, that Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, were not Naturally, and Immutably so, but only by Human Laws and Appointment.

An Account of the most Antient of them from Plato and Aristotle; as also from Diogenes Laerius and Plutarch. Also in this latter Age some have affirmed, that there is no Incorporeal Substance, nor any Natural Difference of Good and Evil, Just and Unjust. The Opinion of some Modern Theologers proposed, with its Necessary Consequences, owned by some of them, by others disowned; but all agreeing in this, that Things Morally Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, are not so by Nature, and antecedent to the Divine Command, but by Divine Command and Institution.

Page I

### CHAP. II.

**T**HAT Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, Honest and Dishonest, cannot be Arbitrary Things without Nature made by Will. Every Thing must by its

## The THE CONTENT END ST

its own Nature be what it is, and Nothing else. That even in Positive Laws and Commands, it is not mere Will that obligeth, but the Natures of Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, really existing. The Distinction betwixt Things Naturally and Positively Good and Evil, more clearly explained. No Positive Command makes any Thing Morally Good or Evil, Just or Unjust; nor can oblige otherwise than by Virtue of what is Naturally Just.

13

### C H A P. III.

That the Opinion of those who affirm that Moral Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, depend upon the Arbitrary Will of God, implies a Contradiction. The Essences of Things not convertible into one another. Particular Essences depend not on the Arbitrary Will of God. That there is in God a Nature of Goodness superiour to Wisdom, which measures and determines his Wisdom, as This does his Will. A Mystical or Ænigmatical Representation of the Nature of God.

27

### B O O K II. C H A P. I.

That, to avoid the Force of what is above demonstrated, some Philosophers have denied there was any immutable Nature or Essence, affirming all Being and Knowledge to be Phantastical and Relative, of whom Protagoras the Abderite was the Chief: Whose Intent in Proposing it, and a Consequence thereof was, the Destroying of all Morality, and to disprove the Absolute and Immutable Nature of Good and Evil, Just and Unjust.

38

C H A P.

## THE CONTENTS.

Chap. II.

*The Pretences or Grounds for this Opinion considered.*

*That it was grounded on the Heraclitical Philosophy, which introduced a Moveable Essence, affirming that nothing stood, but all Things moved. Protagoras's Inference from hence, who to the Heraclitical added the Old Atomical or Phœnician Philosophy, and by this Mixture made up his Own,*

43

## CHAP. III.

*That the Atomical or Mechanical Philosophy was known to Potagoras, who lived before Democritus. A brief Account of it. That by the Motion of Particles all Things are generated and corrupted is asserted by him, and that all Sensible Qualities are Nothing without us, but only Passions and Sensations in us,*

48

## CHAP. IV.

*That the Atomical Philosophy is more antient than the Trojan War, and was invented by one Moschus a Sidonian. That this Moschus the Phœnician is the same with Mochus the Physiologer, who is the same with Moses the Jewish Lawgiver. That Plato and Aristotle were not unacquainted with this Phœnician Philosophy, which was rejected by Plato because abused to Scepticism, as also by Aristotle; but revived by Epicurus, who so blended it with Impiety and Immorality, that it soon sunk again. It hath been successfully restored in the last Age,*

55

CHAP.

## The C O N T E N T S.

### C H A P. V.

*That the Paradoxes Protagoras and Others grounded on this Atomical Philosophy, are absurd and contradictory, and inconsequent from us; and the Assertion that Nothing is Absolutely true, but only Relatively to him that thinks so, is no less Absurd, and overturns itself,* 65

### C H A P. VI.

*That these Assertions of Protagoras, Knowledge is Sense, and Knowledge is but Phantastical and Relative, are effectually overturned by the Atomical Philosophy; of which the Genuine Result is, That Sense alone is not the Judge of what does Really and Absolutely exist, but that there is another Principle in us superior to Sense.* 69

### B O O K III. C H A P. I.

*What Sense is, and that it is not Knowledge. How Sensation is performed. The Soul is Passive in Sensation, though not altogether so. Various Kinds of Sensations.* 75

### C H A P. II.

*That Sense is a Confused Perception obtruded on the Soul from without, but Knowledge the Active Energy of an unpassionate Power in the Soul, which is vitally united to the Body. The Difference betwixt Sensitive and Intellectual Cogitation, and their different Uses in General.* 84

C H A P.

## The C O N T E N T S.

### C H A P. III.

*The Difference between Sense or Sensation and Intellection or Knowledge, described more accurately in five Particulars, with a further Explication and Demonstration from Plato,* 93

### C H A P. IV.

*A further Proof, that Sense is not Science, illustrated by several Instances. Sense is only a Seeming or Appearance of Things Corporeal existing, which may be though the Things have not a Real Existence. Reasons of this. Phantasms and Sensible Idea's are really or Materially the same Thing. Phantasms Voluntary and Involuntary. That Phantasms may become Sensations, and è contrà,* 103

### B O O K. IV. C H A P. I.

*That Knowledge is an Inward active Energy of the Mind, not arising from Things acting from without. Sense is not a mere Passion, but a Passive Perception of the Soul, having something of Vital Energy, and is a Cogitation. The Immediate Objects of Intellection not Things without the Mind, but the Idea's of the Mind itself, which is not weakened by the most Radiant and Illustrious Truths, as the Sense is by what is exceedingly sensible. Hath a Criterion in it self whereby to know when it hath found what it sought. Two Kinds of perceptive Cogitations in the Soul, the one Passive, which are either *αὐδήματα* Sensations, or *φαντασματα* Imaginations; the other Kind are*

(a) called

## THE CONTENTS.

called *phantasmata*. That the *phantasmata* are not raised out of the *Phantasmatum* by the *Intellectus agens*, 126

### CHAP. II.

That some Idea's of the Mind proceed not from outward Sensible Objects, but arise from the Inward Activity of the Mind it self. The Cause of Mens Mistake herein. How far the Passion of Sense reaches, and where the Mind's Activity begins. Sense no competent Judge of the Reality of Relative Idea's, which though they were mere Notions of the Mind or Modes of Conceiving, yet it follows not that they have no Reality. They are not disagreeable to the Reality of Things, and so not false. The Beauty, the Strength and Ability of Natural and Corporeal Things, depend upon these Relations and Proportions. Instances proposed to illustrate this Matter. All the Idea's of Things Artificial have something in them that never came from Sense. This true of Plants and Animals. No Essential Difference betwixt Natural Compounded and Artificial Things. Sense has no Idea of the Cogitative Being joined to Rational Animals, nor of the Universe as it is one Corporeal Frame, much less of the Idea's or Modes of Thinking Beings. 148

### CHAP. III.

That even Simple Corporeal Things, passively perceived by Sense, are known or understood only by the Active Power of the Mind. That Sensation is not Knowledge of these Things, much less any secondary Result from Sense. Besides *Æsthemata*

## The C O N T E N T S.

mata and Phantasmata, there must be Noemata or Intelligible Idea's coming from the Mind it self. This confirmed and illustrated by several Instances and Similitudes. That there is an Intelligible Idea of a Triangle inwardly exerted from the Mind, distinct from the Phantasm or sensible Idea; both which may be in the Mind together. Some Sensible Idea's not impressed on the Soul by Things without. That Sense is a Kind of Speech of outward Nature conversing with the Mind. Two Kinds of per-ceptive Powers in the Soul. Knowledge does not begin, but end in Individuals. A double Error of Vulgar Philosophers. Immediate Objects of all Geometrical Science are the Intelligible and Universal Idea's of a Triangle, &c. exerted from the Mind, and comprehended in it.

188

## C H A P. IV.

That individual Material Things cannot be the Immediate Objects of Intellection and Knowledge, besides which there must be some other Kind of Beings or Entities, as the Immediate Objects of them, such Things as do not flow, but remain Immutably the same. These Immutable Entities what they are, from whence, and where they exist. That there is an Eternal Mind, from which all Created Understandings are constantly furnished with Idea's. Conclusion, that Wisdom, Knowledge and Understanding, are Eternal and self-subsistent Things, superior to Matter, and all sensible Things.

237

## C H A P. V.

That the Intelligible Notions of Things, though existing only in the Mind, are not Figments of the Mind, but

## The C O N T E N T S.

but have an *Immutable Nature*. The Criterion of *Truth*. The Opinion, that *Nothing* can be demonstrated to be true *Absolutely*, but only *Hypothetically*, Refuted. Whatever is clearly *Intelligible*, is *Absolutely true*. Though *Men* are often deceived, and think they clearly comprehend what they do not; It follows not, that they can never be certain that they clearly comprehend any *Thing*. The Conclusion with *Origen*, That *Science* and *Knowledge* is the only firm *Thing* in the *World*.

262

## C H A P. VI.

In what Sense the *Essences of Things* are *Eternal* and *Immutable*. Every *Thing* is what it is, to *Science* or *Knowledge* whether *absolutely* or *relative*ly, *unchangeable* by any *Mind*: So that If *Moral Good* and *Evil*, *Just* and *Unjust*, in *Things* so *denominated*, as the *Actions* or *Souls* of *Men*, they must have some *certain Natures* *unalterable* by any *Will* or *Opinion*. That the *Soul* is not a mere *Rasa Tabula*. That it is in *Order* of *Nature* before the *Body* and *Matter*, does not result out of it, but commands, governs and rules it. The whole *Corporeal World* a *Heap* of *Dust* and *Atoms*. There can be no such *Thing* as *Morality* unless there be a *God*. The *Commendation* of the *Atomical Philosophy* successfully revived by *Cartesius*. Epicurus taxed for his *Sottishness*.

283

A T R E A T I S E



A

T R E A T I S E  
 CONCERNING  
 E T E R N A L a n d I M M U T A B L E  
 M O R A L I T Y.



B O O K I.

C H A P. I.

I.



S the Vulgar generally look no higher for the Original of *Moral Good and Evil, Just and Unjust*, than the Codes and Pandects, the Tables and Laws of their Country and Religion ; so there have not wanted pretended Philosophers in all Ages who have asserted nothing to be *Good and Evil*,

B

*Evil,*

2 Concerning Eternal and  
Evil, Just and Unjust, <sup>a</sup> Naturally and  
Immutably; but that all these things were  
Positive, Arbitrary and Factitious only. <sup>b</sup>  
Such Plato mentions in his Tenth Book *de  
Legibus*, who maintain'd, <sup>c</sup> That nothing at  
all was Naturally Just, but Men changing  
their Opinions concerning them perpetually,  
sometimes made one thing Just, sometimes an-  
other; but whatsoever is decreed and consti-  
tuted, that for the time is Valid, being made so  
by Arts and Laws, but not by any Nature of  
its own. And again in his *Theætetus*, <sup>d</sup> As  
to things Just and Unjust, Holy and Unholy,  
not only the Protagoreans (of whom we shall  
treat afterward) but many other Philosophers  
also confidently affirm, that none of these things  
have in Nature any Essence of their own, but  
whatsoever is decreed by the Authority of the  
City, that is truly such when it is so decreed,

<sup>a</sup> Φύσις καὶ ἀκινήτως.

<sup>b</sup> Θετικὸς, νομιμὸς, ψηφισματόδην.

<sup>c</sup> Τὰ δίκαια οὐδὲ τίναι τὸ παράπαν φύσει, ἀλλ' ἀμφισβητήτως  
θετοῦσιν ἄλλοις οὐ μεταβιβερόντες οὐδὲ ταῦτα· ἀ οὐ μετάδον]  
Ἐσταν, τότε κύρια ἵκαστα τίναι γεγνόμενα τέχνη οὐ τοῖς νόμοις, ἀλλ' οὐ  
δι τωι φύσει.

<sup>d</sup> Εν τοῖς δίκαιοις καὶ ἀδίκοις, Εἰ δίσοις καὶ ἀδίσοις, θεέλντιν ἐχ-  
εῖτες οὐκ εἰς φύσει ἀντρῶν οὐδὲν οὐσίαν ἔστιν οὐχον, ἀλλὰ τὸ κοινῆ  
δόξαν τότε γίνεται ἀληθὲς τότε ὅταν δέξῃ καὶ ὅσον ἀν δοκῆ χρέον. Εἰ  
ὅσοι ἐ μὴ πατάπατοι τὸ Πρωταγόρειον λόγον λέγεσσιν ἀδε πᾶς τὴν σο-  
φίαν ἔγγει.

and

and for so long Time, viz. Just or Unjust, Holy or Unholy. And Aristotle more than once takes notice of this Opinion in his Ethicks.

• *Things Honest and Just, which Politicks are conversant about, have so great a Variety and Uncertainty in them, that they seem to be only by Law, and not by Nature.* And afterwards, Lib. v. c. 10. after he had divided [τὸ δικαῖον πολιτικὸν] That which is Politically Just into [φυσικὸν] i. e. *Natural* <sup>f</sup>, which has every where the same Force, and [Νομικὸν] <sup>g</sup> i. e. *Legal*, which before there be a Law made, is *Indifferent*, but when once the Law is made, is determined to be *Just* or *Unjust*: Which *Legal*, *Just* and *Unjust*, (as he afterward expresses it) are <sup>h</sup> like to *Wine* and *Wheat Measures*, as *Pints* and *Bushels*, which are not every where of an equal Bigness, being commonly Lesser with those that sell, and Greater with those that buy: Then he adds, <sup>i</sup> *Some there are that think that*

<sup>f</sup> Arist. Eth. Nicom. lib. 1. cap. 1. Τὰ δὲ καλὰ Εἰ τὰ δικαῖα περὶ οὐκ οὐ πολιτικὴ σκοπεῖται, τοσαντην ἔχει Δικαιοράτης Εἰ πλάνη ἡτοι δοκεῖ γάρ τι μόνον εἶναι, φύσις δὲ μη.

<sup>g</sup> Τὸ πανταχοῦ τὴν ἀντίτιν ἔχει δύναμιν.

<sup>h</sup> Οἱ δὲ διρήσις οὐδὲν Δικαιοράτης ἔτιος οὐ ἄλλως. ὅταν δὲ θάνται, Δικαιοράτης.

<sup>i</sup> Ομοίας τοῖς μίτροις ὀνυχοῖς Δριταροῖς.

<sup>j</sup> Δοκεῖ δὲ οὐδεὶς πάντας εἶναι τοιαῦτα, ὅτι τὸ μὲν φύσις ἀκίνητος Εἰ πανταχοῦ τὴν ἀντίτιν ἔχει δύναμιν, ὡσπερ τὸ πῦρ καὶ οὐδέποτε Εἰ σὺ Πίρτας μητέ.

4      *Concerning Eternal and*

*there is no other Just or Unjust, but what is made by Law and Men, because that which is Natural is Immutable, and hath every where the same Force, as Fire burns alike here and in Persia; but they see that Jura & Justa, Rights and Just things are every where different.*

2. THE Philosophers particularly noted for this Opinion in *Plato*, are *Protagoras* in his *Theætetus*, *Polus* and *Callicles* in his *Gorgias*, *Thrasymachus*, and *Glauco* in his *Polticks*; but *Diogenes Laertius* tells us of some others, as of *Archelaus*, *Socrates*'s Master, that held <sup>k</sup> *That Just and Dishonest are not so by Nature but by Law*; and (as I conceive) *Democritus*; for after he had set down his Opinion concerning Happiness, or the Chief End, he adds this as part of the *Democritical Philosophy* [τωιητὰ νομιμὰ εἶναι] which I understand thus, *That things accounted Just or Unjust, are all Factitious or Artificial things, not Natural; nothing being Real or Natural but Atoms and Vacuum, as the following Words are*<sup>1</sup>. The same is noted by *Diogenes* also concerning *Aristippus*,

<sup>k</sup> Τὸ δίκαιον εἶναι ē τὸ ἀνηρπὸν καὶ φύσις ἀλλὰ νόμος.

<sup>1</sup> φύσις δὲ ἀτομακ ē κυρόν.

Plato's Contemporary, that he asserted, <sup>m</sup> *That nothing was Good or Evil otherwise than by Law or Custom.* And Plutarch, in the Life of Alexander, tells us of Anaxarchus, that was Aristotle's Equal, that when Alexander repenting, sadly lamented the Death of Clitus, whom he had rashly slain, he read this Lecture of Philosophy to him to Comfort him, <sup>n</sup> *"That whatsoever is done by the Supreme Power, is ipso facto Just."* And Pyrrho, the Etienfick Philosopher, and Father of the Scepticks, that was Anaxarchus's Scholar, seems to have been Dogmatical in nothing else but this, <sup>o</sup> *That there is nothing Good or Shameful, Just or Unjust, and so likewise as to All things, that there is nothing so in Truth, but that Men do All things according to Law and Custom.*

3. AFTER these succeeded Epicurus, the Reviver of the Democritical Philosophy, the Frame of whose Principles must needs lead him to deny Justice and Injustice to be Natural things; and therefore he determines that they arise wholly from mutual Pacts, and

<sup>m</sup> Μηδὲν εἶναι φύσει δίκαιον οὐ καλὸν οὐ ἀισχρὸν, ἀλλὰ νόμῳ εἴθε.

<sup>n</sup> Πᾶν τὸ πρεγενέν ταῦτα Φρεστῆι Θεῷ, δίκαιον εἶναι.

<sup>o</sup> Οὔτε καλὸν γέτε ἀισχρὸν, γέτε δίκαιον γέτε ἀδίκον, Εἰ δέ τις πάνταν μηδὲν γίνεται τῇ ἀληθείᾳ, νόμῳ δὲ εἴθε πάντα τὰς ἀνθρώπους περιέττει.

## 6      *Concerning Eternal and*

Covenants of Men made for their own Convenience and Utility, and Laws resulting from thence. <sup>p</sup> *Those Living Creatures that could not make Mutual Covenants together not to hurt, nor to be hurt by one another, could not for this Cause have any such thing as Just or Unjust amongst them. And there is the same Reason for those Nations that either will not, or cannot make such Mutual Compacts not to hurt one another. For there is no such thing as Justice by itself, but only in the Mutual Congresses of Men, wheresoever they have entered together into Covenant not to hurt one another.* The late Compiler of the Epicurean System expresses this Philosopher's Meaning after this manner : <sup>q</sup> *There are some that think that those things that are Just, are Just according to their proper, unvaried Nature,*

<sup>p</sup> Ὅσα τὰς ζώαν μὴ ἴδοντα συνθήκας ποιεῖσθαι τὰς ὑπὲρ τῆς, μὴ βλάπτειν, ἀλλὰ μηδὲ βλάπτεσθαι, πρὸς ταῦτα οὐδέτεροι εἰσι οὐδὲ δίκαιοι οὐδὲ ἀδίκοι. ἀστίντας δὲ Εἴ τὰς ἔνθατης Ὅσα μὴ ἴδοντα ἢ ἴδούστα τὰς συνθήκας ποιεῖσθαι τὰς ὑπὲρ τοῦ μὴ βλάπτειν μηδὲ βλάπτεσθαι· οὐκ ἢ τὶ κατ' εἰντὸν δικαιοσύνην, ἀλλὰ εἰ ταῖς μετὰ ἀλλήλων συντροφαῖς, κατ' οποδίκης δικοτε εἰς τόπους συνθήκης τις ὑπὲρ τῆς μὴ βλάπτειν ἢ βλάπτεσθαι.

<sup>q</sup> Sunt quidam qui Existimant ea quae justa sunt, esse secundum Propriam Invariataisque naturam Justa, & Leges non ista Justa Facere, sed duntaxat Praescribere juxta eam quam habent Naturam; verum res non ita se habet.

[Gassendus Syn' agm.  
and

and that the Laws do not make them Just, but only prescribe according to that Nature which they have. But the thing is not so.

AFTER Epicurus, Carneades, the Author of the New Academy, as *Lactantius* testifieth, was also a zealous Assertor of the same Doctrine.

4. AND since in this latter Age the Physiological Hypotheses of *Democritus* and *Epicurus* have been revived, and successfully applied to the solving of some of the *Phænomena* of the Visible World, there have not wanted those that have endeavoured to vent also those other Paradoxes of the same Philosophers, *viz.* That there is no Incorporeal Substance, Nor any Natural Difference of Good and Evil, Just and Unjust; and to recommend the same under a shew of Wisdom, as the deep and profound Mysteries of the *Atomical* or *Corpuscular* Philosophy. As if senseless Matter and Atoms were the Original of all things, according to that Song of Old *Silenus* in the Poet. <sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Namque canebat uti magnum per inane coacta  
Semina terrarumque animaque marisque fuissent,  
Et liquidi simul ignis; ut his exordia primis  
Omnia, & ipse tener mundi concreverit orbis.

[Virg. Eclog. VI.

*He sung the secret Seeds of Nature's Frame ;  
How Seas, and Earth, and Air, and active  
Flame,*

*Fell through the mighty Void, and in their fall  
Were blindly gather'd in this goodly Ball.*

Of this sort is that late Writer of Ethicks and Politicks, who asserts, <sup>1</sup> That there are no authentick Doctrines concerning Just and Unjust, Good and Evil, except the Laws which are established in every City : And that it concerns none to enquire whether an Action shall be reputed Just or Unjust, Good or Evil, except such only whom the Community have appointed to be the Interpreters of their Laws.

AND again, <sup>2</sup> Even a Christian Government hath Power to determine what is Righteous, and what is the Transgression of it.

<sup>1</sup> Doctrinas de justo & injusto, bono & malo, præter leges in unaquaque civitate constitutas, authenticas esse nullas; et utrum aliqua actio justa vel injusta, bona vel mala futura sit, a nemine inquirendum esse præterquam ab iis ad quos legum suarum interpretationem Civitas demandaverit.

<sup>2</sup> Ad civitatem pertinet etiam Christianam, quid sit justitia, quid injustitia, sive peccatum contra justitiam, determinare. [p. 343. Hobbes de Cive.]

AND

AND he gives us the same over again in English <sup>u</sup>: *In the State of Nature nothing can be Unjust; the Notions of Right and Wrong, Justice and Injustice have there no Place; where there is no Common Power, there is no Law; where no Law, no Transgression.* <sup>x</sup> *No Law can be unjust.* Nay, Temperance is no more <sup>y</sup> Naturally according to this Civil (or rather Uncivil) Philosopher, than Justice. <sup>z</sup> *Sensuality in that Sense in which it is condemned, hath no Place till there be Laws.*

5. BUT whatsoever was the true meaning of these Philosophers, that affirm Justice and Injustice to be only by Law and not by Nature (of which I shall discourse afterwards,) certain it is, that divers Modern Theologers do not only seriously, but zealously contend in like Manner, *That there is nothing Absolutely, Intrinsically and Naturally Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, antecedently to any positive Command or Prohibition of God; but that the Arbitrary Will and Pleasure of God, (that is, an Omnipotent Being devoid of all Essential and Natural Justice) by its Commands and Prohibitions, is the first and only Rule and Measure thereof.* Whence it fol-

<sup>u</sup> *Leviathan*, p. 63.

<sup>x</sup> p. 182.

<sup>y</sup> φύσις

<sup>z</sup> p. 25.

lows

lows unavoidably, that nothing can be imagined so grossly wicked, or so foully unjust or dishonest, but if it were supposed to be commanded by this Omnipotent Deity, must needs upon that Hypothesis forthwith become Holy, Just and Righteous. For though the Ancient Fathers of the Christian Church were very abhorrent from this Doctrine, (as shall be shewed hereafter) yet it crept up afterward in the Scholastick Age, *Ockham* being among the first that maintained <sup>a</sup> *That there is no Act Evil but as it is prohibited by God, and which cannot be made good if it be commanded by God. And so on the other hand as to Good. And herein Petrus Alliacus and Andreas de Novo Castro, with others, quickly followed him.*

But this Doctrine hath been since chiefly promoted and advanced by such as think nothing so essential to the Deity, as *Uncontrollable Power* and *Arbitrary Will*, and therefore that God could not be God if there should be any Thing Evil in its own Nature which he could not do; and who impute such dark Counsels and dismal Actions unto God, as cannot be justified otherwise than by say-

<sup>a</sup> *Nullum actum Malum esse nisi quatenus a Deo prohibatum, et qui non possit fieri bonus si a Deo præcipiatur; et e Converfo.*

ing, that whatsoever God can be supposed to do or will, will be *for that Reason* Good or Just, because he wills it.

Now the necessary and unavoidable Consequences of this Opinion are such as these, <sup>b</sup> *That to love God is by Nature an indifferent thing, and is morally Good only, because it is commanded by God; That to prohibit the Love of God, or command the Hatred of God, is not inconsistent with the Nature of God, but only with his Free Will; That it is not Inconsistent with the Natural Equity of God to command Blasphemy, Perjury, Lying, &c. That God may command what is contrary, as to all the Precepts of the Decalogue, so especially to the First, Second, Third; That Holiness is not a Conformity with the Nature of God;*

<sup>b</sup> *Amare Deum φύσις esse αὐθικός, et Moraliter Bonum solummodo quia a Deo jubetur: Prohibere Dei amorem vel præcipere Dei odium, non pugnare cum Dei naturâ, sed tantum cum voluntate liberâ. Non repugnare Juri Divino Naturali præcipere peccata. Deum posse imperare Blasphemiam, Perjurium, Mendacium, &c. Deum posse præcipere contrarium ut omnibus Præceptis Decalogi, ita potissimum Primo, Secundo, Tertio. Sanctitatem non esse Conformatatem cum Natura Dei; Deum posse Hominem Obligare ad Impossible; Deum nullam habere Naturalem Inclinationem in bonum Creaturarum; Deum jure posse Creaturam insontem æternis cruciatibus damnare.*

*That*

That God may oblige Man to what is impossible; That God hath no Natural Inclination to the Good of the Creatures; That God can justly doom an innocent Creature to Eternal Torment. All which Propositions, with others of like Kind are Word for Word asserted by some late Authors. Though I think not fit to mention the Names of any of them in this Place, excepting only one, *Joannes Szydlovius*, who in a <sup>c</sup> Book published at Franeker, hath professedly avowed and maintained the grossest of them. And yet neither he, nor the rest are to be thought any more Blame-worthy herein, than many others, that holding the same Premises have either dissembled, or disowned those Conclusions which unavoidably follow therefrom: But rather to be commended for their Openness, Simplicity and Ingenuity, in representing their Opinion nakedly to the World, such as indeed it is, without any Veil or Mask.

WHEREFORE since there are so many, both Philosophers and Theologers, that seemingly and verbally acknowledge such things as *Moral Good and Evil, Just and Unjust*, that contend notwithstanding that these are

<sup>c</sup> *Vindiciæ quæstionum aliquot difficilium.*

not <sup>d</sup> by *Nature*, but <sup>e</sup> *Institution*, and that there is nothing *Naturally* or *Immutable* *Just* or *Unjust*; I shall from hence fetch the Rise of this Ethical Discourse or Inquiry <sup>f</sup> concerning things *Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, Laudable and Shameful*: (For so I find these Words frequently used as synonymous in *Plato*, and other Ancient Authors,) demonstrating in the first Place, that if there be any thing at all *Good or Evil, Just or Unjust*, there must of Necessity be <sup>g</sup> something *Naturally and Immutable Good and Just*. And from thence I shall proceed afterward to shew what this <sup>h</sup> *Natural, Immutable, and Eternal Justice is*, with the Branches and Species of it.

## C H A P. II.

I. **W**HEREFORE in the first Place, it is a Thing which we shall very easily demonstrate, *That Moral Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, Honest and Dishonest,*

<sup>d</sup> Φύσει.      <sup>e</sup> Θίσει.      <sup>g</sup> Περὶ τῶν ἀγαθῶν καὶ  
κακῶν, δικαιῶν καὶ αδίκων, καλῶν καὶ αἰσχρῶν.  
Φυσικὸν καὶ αἰνῆτον.

<sup>f</sup> Περὶ τῶν ἀγαθῶν καὶ  
κακῶν, δικαιῶν καὶ αδίκων.      <sup>h</sup> Δίκαιον  
Φυσικὸν φυσικὸν αἰνῆτον καὶ  
διάνοιαν.

(if

(if they be not meer Names without any Signification, or Names for nothing else, but *Willed* and *Commanded*, but have a Reality in Respect of the Persons obliged to do and avoid them) *cannot possibly be Arbitrary things, made by Will without Nature*; because it is Universally true, That things are what they are, not by *Will* but by *Nature*. As for Example, Things are White by Whiteness, and Black by Blackness, Triangular by Triangularity, and Round by Rotundity, Like by Likeness, and Equal by Equality, that is, by such certain Natures of their own. Neither can Omnipotence itself (to speak with Reverence) by meer Will make a Thing White or Black without Whiteness or Blackness; that is, without such certain Natures, whether we consider them as Qualities in the Objects without us according to the *Peripatetical Philosophy*, or as certain Dispositions of Parts in respect of Magnitude, Figure, Site and Motion, which beget those Sensations or Phantasms of White and Black in us. Or, to instance in Geometrical Figures, Omnipotence itself cannot by meer Will make a Body *Triangular*, without having the Nature and Properties of a *Triangle* in it; That is, without having three Angles equal

equal to two Right ones, nor Circular without the Nature of a *Circle*; that is, without having a Circumference Equidistant every where from the Center or Middle Point. Or lastly, to instance in things Relative only; Omnipotent Will cannot make Things Like or Equal one to another, without the Natures of Likeness and Equality. The Reason whereof is plain, because all these Things imply a manifest Contradiction; That things should be what they are not. And this is a Truth fundamentally Necessary to all Knowledge, that Contradictories cannot be true: For otherwise, nothing would be certainly true or false. Now things may as well be made White or Black by meer Will, without Whiteness or Blackness, Equal and Unequal, without Equality and Inequality, as Morally Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, Honest and Dishonest, *Debita* and *Illicita*, by meer Will, without any Nature of Goodness, Justice, Honesty. For though the Will of God be the Supreme Efficient Cause of all things, and can produce into Being or Existence, or reduce into Nothing what it pleaseth, yet it is not the Formal Cause of any Thing besides itself, as the Schoolmen

have determined, in these Words, <sup>1</sup> *That God himself cannot supply the Place of a formal Cause*: And therefore it cannot supply the Formal Cause, or Nature of *Justice* or *Injustice*, *Honesty* or *Dishonesty*. Now all that we have hitherto said amounts to no more than this, that it is impossible any Thing should Be by *Will only*, that is, without a *Nature* or *Entity*, or that the Nature and Essence of any thing should be Arbitrary.

2. AND since a Thing cannot be made any thing by meer Will without a Being or Nature, every Thing must be necessarily and immutably determined by its own Nature, and the Nature of things be that which it is, and nothing else. For though the Will and Power of God have an Absolute, Infinite and Unlimited Command upon the Existences of all Created things to make them to be, or not to be at Pleasure; yet when things exist, they are what they are, This or That, Absolutely or Relatively, not by Will or Arbitrary Command, but by the Necessity of their own Nature. There is no such thing as an Arbitrarius Essence, Mode or Relation, that may be made indifferently any Thing at Plea-

<sup>1</sup> *Deum ipsum non posse supplere locum Cause formalis.*

sure: for an Arbitrarius Essence is a Being without a Nature, a Contradiction, and therefore a Non-Entity. Wherefore the Natures of Justice and Injustice cannot be Arbitrarius Things, that may be Applicable by Will indifferently to any Actions or Dispositions whatsoever. For the Modes of all Subsistent Beings, and the Relations of things to one another, are immutably and necessarily what they are, and not Arbitrary, being not by Will but by Nature.

3. Now the necessary Consequence of that which we have hitherto said is this, That it is so far from being true, that all *Moral Good* and *Evil*, *Just* and *Unjust* are meer Arbitrary and Factitious things, that are created wholly by Will; that (if we would speak properly) we must needs say that nothing is *Morally Good or Evil, Just or Unjust* by meer Will without Nature, because every thing is what it is by Nature, and not by Will. For though it will be objected here, that when God, or Civil Powers Command a Thing to be done, that was not before <sup>1</sup> *obligatory or unlawful*, the thing Willed or Commanded doth forthwith become <sup>1</sup> *Obligatory*, that

<sup>1</sup> *Debitum or illicitum,*

<sup>1</sup> *Δίνη or debitum.*

which ought to be done by Creatures and Subjects respectively; in which the Nature of Moral Good or Evil is commonly Conceived to consist. And therefore if all Good and Evil, Just and Unjust be not the Creatures of meer Will (as many assert) yet at least *Positive things* must needs owe all their Morality, their Good and Evil to meer Will without Nature: Yet notwithstanding, if we well Consider it, we shall find that even in *Positive Commands* themselves, meer Will doth not make the thing commanded Just or <sup>m</sup> Obligatory, or beget and create any Obligation to Obedience; but that <sup>it is</sup> Natural Justice or Equity, which gives to one the Right or Authority of Commanding, and begets in another Duty and Obligation to Obedience. Therefore it is observable, that Laws and Commands do not run thus, to Will that this or that thing shall become <sup>n</sup> Just or Unjust, Obligatory or Unlawful; or that Men shall be obliged or bound to obey; but only to require that something be done or not done, or otherwise to menace Punishment to the Transgressors thereof. For it was never heard of, that any one founded all his Au-

<sup>m</sup> Debitum.  
Illicitum.

<sup>n</sup> Justum or Injustum, Debitum or

thority

thority of Commanding others, and others Obligation or Duty to Obey his Commands, in a Law of his own making, that men should be Required, Obliged, or Bound to Obey him. Wherefore since the thing willed in all Laws is not that men should be Bound or Obliged to Obey ; this thing cannot be the product of the meer Will of the Commander, but it must proceed from something else ; namely, the Right or Authority of the Commander, which is founded in natural Justice and Equity, and an antecedent Obligation to Obedience in the Subjects ; which things are not Made by Laws, but pre-supposed before all Laws to make them valid : And if it should be imagined, that any one should make a positive Law to require that others should be Obliged, or Bound to Obey him, every one would think such a Law ridiculous and absurd ; for if they were Obliged before, then this Law would be in vain, and to no Purpose ; and if they were not before Obliged, then they could not be Obliged by any Positive Law, because they were not previously Bound to Obey such a Person's Commands : So that Obligation to Obey all Positive Laws is Older than all Laws, and Previous or Antecedent

20 *Concerning Eternal and*

to them. Neither is it a thing that is arbitrarily Made by Will, or can be the Object of Command, but that which either *Is* or *Is not* by Nature. And if this were not *Morally Good and Just* in its own Nature before any Positive Command of God, *That God should be Obeyed by his Creatures*, the bare Will of God himself could not beget an Obligation upon any to Do what he Willed and Commanded, because the Natures of things do not depend upon Will, being not <sup>o</sup> *things that are arbitrarily Made, but things that Are.* To conclude therefore, even in *Positive Laws and Commands* it is not meer Will that Obligeth, but the Natures of Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, really existing in the World.

4. WHEREFORE that common Distinction betwixt things, *things naturally and positively Good and Evil*, or (as others express it) betwixt Things that are therefore commanded because they are Good and Just, and Things that are therefore Good and Just, because they are Commanded, stands in need of a right Explication, that we be not led into a mistake thereby, as if the Obligation to do those *Thetical* and *Positive* things did arise

<sup>o</sup> Τυγχάνει but οὐλα, πρώτη & δεύτη.

wholly

wholly from Will without Nature: Whereas it is not the meer Will and Pleasure of him that commandeth, that obligeth to do Positive things commanded, but the Intellectual Nature of him that is commanded. Wherefore the Difference of these things lies wholly in this, That there are some things which the Intellectual Nature obligeth to <sup>a</sup> of it self, and directly, absolutely and perpetually, and these things are called naturally Good and Evil; other things there are which the same Intellectual Nature Obligeth to by Accident only, and hypothetically, upon Condition of some voluntary Action either of our own or some other Persons, by means whereof those things which were in their own Nature indifferent, falling under something that is absolutely Good or Evil, and thereby acquiring a new Relation to the Intellectual Nature, do for the time become <sup>b</sup> such Things as Ought to be Done or Omitted, being Made such not by Will but by Nature. As for Example, *To keep Faith and perform Covenants*, is that which natural Justice obligeth to absolutely; therefore <sup>c</sup> upon the Supposition that any one maketh

<sup>a</sup> Per se.  
hypothesi.

<sup>b</sup> Φύσις.

<sup>c</sup> Debita or Illicita.

<sup>d</sup> Ex

a Promise, which is a voluntary Act of his own, to do something which he was not before Obliged to by natural Justice, upon the intervention of this voluntary Act of his own, that indifferent thing promised falling now under something absolutely Good, and becoming the Matter of Promise and Covenant, standeth for the present in a new Relation to the Rational Nature of the Promiser, and becometh for the time a thing which Ought to be done by him, or which he is obliged to do. Not as if the meer Will or Words and Breath of him that covenanteth had any power to change the Moral Natures of things, or any Ethical Virtue of Obliging; but because Natural Justice and Equity obligeth to keep Faith and perform Covenants. In like manner Natural Justice, that is, the Rational or Intellectual Nature, obligeth not only to Obey God, but also Civil Powers, that have lawful Authority of Commanding, and to observe Political order amongst men; and therefore if God or Civil Powers command any thing to be done that is not unlawful in it self; upon the intervention of this voluntary Act of theirs, those things that were before Indifferent, become by accident for



for the time *Obligatory* <sup>u</sup>, such things as Ought to be done by us, not for their own sakes, but for the sake of that which Natural Justice absolutely obligeth to.

AND these are the things that are commonly called <sup>y</sup> *Positively* Good and Evil, Just or Unjust, such as though they are adiaphorous or Indifferent in themselves, yet Natural Justice obligeth to accidentally <sup>z</sup>, *on Supposition* of the voluntary Action of some other Person rightly qualified in Commanding, whereby they fall into something Absolutely Good. Which things are not made Good or <sup>a</sup> *Due* by the meer Will or Pleasure of the Commander, but by that Natural Justice which gives him Right and Authority of Commanding, and Obligeth others to Obey him; without which Natural Justice, neither Covenants nor Commands could possibly oblige any one. For the Will of another doth no more oblige in Commands, than our own Will in Promises and Covenants. To conclude therefore, Things called *Naturally* Good and <sup>b</sup> *Due* are such things as the Intellectual Nature Obliges to immediately, absolutely and perpetually, and upon no Condition of any voluntary Action that may be

<sup>u</sup> *Debita.*

<sup>y</sup> *Oblig.*

<sup>z</sup> *Ex hypothesi.*

<sup>a</sup> *Debita.*

<sup>b</sup> *Debita.*

24 *Concerning Eternal and*

Done or Omitted intervening; but those things that are called *Positively* Good and *Due*, are such as Natural Justice or the Intellectual Nature Obligeth to accidentally and hypothetically, upon Condition of some voluntary Act of another Person invested with lawful Authority in Commanding.

AND that it is not the meer Will of the Commander, that makes these *Positive things* to Oblige or become <sup>4</sup> *Due*, but the Nature of things; appears evidently from hence, because it is not the volition of every one that Obligeth, but of a Person rightly qualified and invested with lawful Authority; and because the liberty of commanding is circumscribed within certain Bounds and Limits, so that if any Commander go beyond the Sphere and Bounds that Nature sets him, which are indifferent things, his Commands will not at all oblige.

5. BUT if we would speak yet more accurately and precisely, we might rather say, That no *Positive Commands* whatsoever do make any thing morally Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, which Nature had not made such before. For Indifferent things Commanded, Considered Materially in themselves, remain

<sup>c</sup> *Debita.*

<sup>d</sup> *Debita.*

still

still what they were before in their own Nature, that is, Indifferent, because (as Aristotle speaks) *Will cannot change Nature*. And those things that are <sup>e</sup> by Nature Indifferent, must needs be as immutably so, as those things that are <sup>f</sup> by Nature Just or Unjust, honest or shameful. But all the Moral Goodness, Justice and Virtue that is exercised in Obeying *Positive Commands*, and doing such things as are <sup>h</sup> positive only, and to be done for no other Cause but because they are Commanded, or in respect to Political Order, consisteth not in the Materiality of the Actions themselves, but in that Formality of yielding Obedience to the Commands of Lawful Authority in them. Just as when a man Covenanteth or Promiseth to do an Indifferent thing which by Natural Justice he was not bound to do, the Virtue of doing it consisteth not in the Materiality of the Action promised, but in the Formality of Keeping Faith and Performing Covenants. Wherefore in *Positive Commands*, the Will of the Commander doth not create any New Moral Entity, but only diversly Modifies and Determines that general Duty or

<sup>e</sup> Τὸ φύσις ἀκίνητος. <sup>f</sup> Φύσις ἀδιάφορα.

<sup>g</sup> Φύσις δίκαια or ἀδίκα, καλὰ or ἀκαλός.

<sup>h</sup> Θέσις.

Obligation of Natural Justice to Obey Lawful Authority and Keep Oaths and Covenants, as our own Will in Promising doth but produce several Modifications of keeping Faith. And therefore there are no *New<sup>i</sup> things Just or due* made by either of them, besides what was alway <sup>k</sup> by nature Such, to Keep our own Promises, and Obey the Lawful Commands of others.

6. We see then that it is so far from being true, that all Moral Good and Evil, Just and Unjust (if they be any thing) are made by meer Will and Arbitrary Commands (as many conceive) that it is not possible that any Command of God or Man should Oblige otherwise than by Virtue of that which is <sup>l</sup> *Naturally Just*. And tho' Particular Promises and Commands be made by Will, yet it is not Will but Nature ~~that~~ obligeth to the doing of things Promised and Commanded, or makes *them<sup>m</sup> such things as ought to be done*. For meer Will cannot change the Moral Nature of Actions, nor the Nature of Intellectual Beings. And therefore if there were no Natural Justice, that is, if the Rational or Intellectual Nature in its self were indetermined and Unobliged

<sup>i</sup> Δίκαια, justa or debita.

<sup>k</sup> Φύσις.

<sup>l</sup> Φύσις δίκαια.

<sup>m</sup> Debita.

to any thing, and so destitute of all Morality, it were not possible that any thing should be made Morally Good or Evil <sup>n</sup>, *obligatory* or *unlawful*, or that any Moral Obligation should be begotten by any Will or Command whatsoever.

---

## C H A P. III.

1. **B**UT some there are that will still Contend, that though it should be granted that *Moral Good and Evil, Just and Unjust* do not depend upon any Created Will, yet notwithstanding they must needs depend upon the Arbitrary Will of God, because the Natures and Essences of all things, and consequently all Verities and Falsities, depend upon the same. For if the Natures and Essences of things should not depend upon the Will of God, it would follow from hence, that something that was not God was independent upon God.

2. **A**ND this is plainly asserted by that ingenious Philosopher *Renatus Des Cartes*, who

\* *Debitum or illicitum.*

in his Answer to the Sixth Objector against his Metaphysical Meditations, writes thus:

• *It is a Contradiction to say, that the Will of God was not from Eternity Indifferent to all things which are or ever shall be done; because no Good or Evil, nothing to be Believed or Done or Omitted, can be fixed upon, the Idea whereof was in the Divine Intellect before that his Will Determined it self to Effect that such a thing should be. Neither do I speak this concerning Priority of Time, but even there was nothing Prior in Order or by Na-*

• *Repugnat Dei voluntatem non fuisse ab æterno indiferentem ad omnia quæ facta sunt aut unquam fient, quia nullum Bonum vel Malum, nullum Credendum vel Faciendum vel Omissendum fangi potest, cuius Idea in Intellectu Divino prius fuerit, quam ejus Voluntas se determinarit ad Efficiendum ut id tale esset. Neque id loquor de Prioritate temporis, sed ne quidem prius fuit Ordine, vel Natura, vel Ratione Ratiocinata ut vocant, ita scilicet ut ista Boni Idea impulerit Deum ad unum potius quam aliud Eligendum. Nempe exempli causa, non ideo voluit creare Mundum in tempore, quia vidit sic melius fore quam si creasset ab æterno, nec voluit Tres Angulos Trianguli æquales esse duobus Rectis, quia cognovit aliter fieri non posse, &c. Sed contra, quia voluit mundum creare in tempore, ideo sic melius est quam si creatus fasset ab æterno; & quia voluit Tres Angulos Trianguli necessario æquales esse duobus rectis, idcirco jam hoc verum est, & fieri aliter non potest; atque ita de reliquis. Et ita summa Indifferentia in Deo summum est ejus Omnipotentiae Argumentum.*

ture,

ture, or Reason as they call it, so as that that Idea of Good inclined God to chuse one thing rather than another. As for Example sake, he would therefore create the World in Time, because that he saw that it would be better so than if he had created it from Eternity; neither willed he that the three Angles of a Triangle should be Equal to two Right Angles, because he knew that it could not be otherwise. But on the contrary, because he would create the World in Time, therefore it is better than if he had created it from Eternity; and because he willed that the three Angles of a Triangle should necessarily be equal to two Right Angles, therefore this is true and can be no otherwise; and so of other things. And thus the Greatest Indifference in God is the Greatest Argument of his Omnipotence.

AND again afterward, p. 162. <sup>p</sup> To him that Considers the Immensity of God it is Manifest, That there can be nothing at all which doth not depend upon him, not only nothing Subsisting, but also no Order, no Law, no Reason of Truth and Goodness.

<sup>p</sup> Attentandi ad Dei Immensitatem manifestum est, Nihil omnino esse posse quod ab ipso non pendeat, non modo nihil Subsistens, sed etiam nullum ordinem, nullam Legem, Nullamve Rationem Veri & Boni.

AND when he was again urged by the Sixth Objector, <sup>4</sup> Could ~~not~~ God cause that the Nature of a Triangle should not be such? and how, I pray thee, could he from Eternity cause that it should not be true, That twice four are eight? He confesseth ingenuously that those things were not intelligible to us; but yet notwithstanding they must be so, because <sup>5</sup> Nothing in any Sort of Being can be, which doth not depend upon God. Which Doctrine of *Cartesius* is greedily swallowed down by some Servile Followers of his that have lately written <sup>6</sup> of the Old Philosophy.

3. Perhaps some may make a Question for all this, whether *Cartesius* were any more in earnest in this, than when he elsewhere goes about to defend the Doctrine of *Transubstantiation* by the Principles of his new Philosophy, because in his *Meditations upon the old Philosophy* (where it is probable he would set down the genuine Sense of his own Mind more undisguisedly, before he was assaulted

<sup>4</sup> Nunquid Deus potuerit efficere ut Natura Trianguli non fuerit? & qua ratione amabo potuisset ab æterno facere ut non fuisset verum bis quatuor esse octo?

<sup>5</sup> Nihil in ullo genere Entis esse potest, quod a Deo non pendeat.

<sup>6</sup> De Prima Philosophia.

by these Objectors, and thereby forced to turn himself into several Shapes) he affirmeth that the Essences of things were eternal and immutable; but being afterward urged by *Gassendus* with this Inconvenience, that then something would be eternal and immutable besides God, and so independent upon God, he doth in a manner unsay it again, and betakes himself to this pitiful Evasion, " *As the Poets feign that the Fates were indeed fixed by Jupiter, but that when they were fixed, he had obliged himself to the preserving of them; so I do not think that the Essences of things, and those mathematical Truths which can be known of them, are independent on God; but I think nevertheless that because God so willed, and so ordered, therefore they are immutable and eternal; which is plainly to make them in their own Nature mutable.* But whether *Cartesius* were in jest or earnest in this Business, it matters not, for his bare Authority ought to be no more valued by us than the

" *Quemadmodum Poetæ fingunt a Jove quidem fata fuisse condita, sed postquam condita fuere, ipsum se iis servandis obstrinxisse; ita ego non puto essentias rerum, mathematicasque ulla veritates quæ de ipsis cognosci possunt, esse indpendentes a Deo; sed puto nihilominus, quia Deus sic voluit, quia sic disposuit, ipsas esse immutabiles & æternas;*

Autho-

Authority of Aristotle and other antient Philosophers was by him, whom he so freely dis-sents from.

4. FOR though the *Names* of things may be changed by any one at pleasure, as that a *Square* may be called a *Circle*, or a *Cube* a *Sphere*; yet that the *Nature* of a *Square* should not be necessarily what it is, but be arbitrarily convertible into the *Nature* of a *Circle*, and so the *Essence* of a *Circle* into the *Essence* of a *Sphere*, or that the self-same Body, which is perfectly *cubical*, without any physical Alteration made in it, should by this metaphysical Way of Transformation of Essences, by meer Will and Command be made *spherical* or *cylindrical*; this doth most plainly imply a Contradiction, and the Possibility of Contradictions destroys all Knowledge and the definite Natures \* or *Notions* of things. Nay, that which implies a Contradiction is a Non-Entity, and therefore cannot be the Object of Divine Power. And the Reason is the same for all other things, as *just* and *unjust*; for every thing is what it is immutably by the Necessity of its own Nature; neither is it any Derogation at all from

\* *Rationes.*

the Power of God to say, that he cannot make a thing to be that which it is not. Then there might be no such thing as Knowledge in God himself. God might will that there should be no such thing as Knowledge.

5. AND as to the Being or not Being of Particular Essences, as that God might, if he pleased, have Willed that there should be no such thing as a *Triangle* or *Circle*, and therefore nothing Demonstrable or Knowable of Either of them; which is likewise asserted by *Cartesius*, and those that make the Essences of things dependent upon an Arbitrary Will in God: This is all one as if one should say, that God could have Willed, if he had pleased, that neither his own Power nor Knowledge should be Infinite.

6. Now it is certain, that if the Natures and Essences of all things, as to their being such or such, do depend upon a Will of God that is essentially Arbitrary, there can be no such thing as *Science* or *Demonstration*, nor the Truth of any Mathematical or Metaphysical Proposition be known any otherwise, than by some *Revelation* of the Will of God concerning it, and by a certain Enthusiastick or Fanatick Faith and Perswasion thereupon, that

D

God

God would have such a thing to be true or false at such a time, or for so long. And so nothing would be true or false <sup>a</sup> *Naturally but Positively* only, all Truth and Science being meer Arbitrarius things. Truth and Falshood would be only Names. Neither would there be any more Certainty in the Knowledge of God himself, since it must wholly depend upon the Mutability of a Will in him Essentially Indifferent and Undetermin'd; and if we would speak properly according to this Hypothesis, God himself would not Know or be Wise by Knowledge or by Wisdom, but by Will.

7. WHEREFORE as for that Argument, *That unless the Essences of things and all Verities and Falsities depend upon the arbitrary Will of God, there would be something that was not God, independent upon God*; if it be well consider'd, it will prove a meer <sup>b</sup> Bugbear, and nothing so terrible and formidable as *Cartesius* seemed to think it. For there is no other genuine Consequence deducible from this Assertion, *That the Essences and Verities of things are independent upon the Will of God*, but that there is an eternal and immutable

<sup>a</sup> Φύσις but Θέσις.

<sup>b</sup> Mormo.

Wisdom in the Mind of God, and thence participated by Created Beings independent upon the Will of God. Now the *Wisdom* of God is as much God as the *Will* of God ; and whether of these two things in God, that is, *Will* or *Wisdom*, should depend upon the other, will be best determined from the several Natures of them. For *Wisdom* in it self hath the Nature of a *Rule* and *Measure*, it being a most Determinate and Inflexible thing ; but *Will* being not only a Blind and Dark thing, as consider'd in it self, but also Indefinite and Indeterminate, hath therefore the Nature of a thing *Regulable* and *Measurable*. Wherefore it is the Perfection of *Will*, as such, to be guided and determined by *Wisdom* and *Truth* ; but to make *Wisdom*, *Knowledge* and *Truth*, to be Arbitrarily determined by *Will*, and to be regulated by such a <sup>c</sup> *Plumbean* and *Flexible Rule* as that is, is quite to destroy the Nature of it ; for *Science* or *Knowledge* is <sup>d</sup> the *Comprehension* of that which necessarily is, and there can be nothing more Contradictious than *Truth* and *Falshood* Arbitrary. Now all the *Knowledge* and *Wisdom* that is in Creatures, whether Angels or Men, is nothing else but a

<sup>c</sup> Κανὼν μολυβδίος.

<sup>d</sup> Κατάληψις τῆς ὀψίας.

36 *Concerning Eternal and*

Participation of that one Eternal, Immutable and Increased Wisdom of God, or several Signatures of that one Archetypal Seal, or like so many multiplied Reflections of one and the same Face, made in several Glasses, whereof some are clearer, some obscurer, some standing nearer, some further off.

8. Moreover, it was the Opinion of the Wisest of the Philosophers, (as we shall shew afterward) That there is also in the Scale of Being a Nature of *Goodness* Superior to *Wisdom*, which therefore measures and determines the *Wisdom* of God, as his *Wisdom* measures and determines his Will, and which the ancient Cabalists were wont to call <sup>כתר</sup> a *Crown*, as being the Top or *Crown* of the Deity, of which more afterward. Wherefore altho' some Novelists make a contracted Idea of God, consisting of Nothing else but *Will* and *Power*; yet his Nature is better expressed by some in this Mystical or Enigmatical Representation of an *infinite Circle*, whose *inmost Center* is *Simple Goodness*, the <sup>1</sup> *Rays* and expanded <sup>2</sup> *Plat* thereof, all *Comprehending* and *Immutable Wisdom*, the *Exterior Periphery* or *Interminate Circumference*, Om-

<sup>1</sup> כתר.

<sup>1</sup> Radii.

<sup>2</sup> Area.

*nipotent*

niotent Will or Activity, by which every thing Without God is brought forth into Existence. Wherefore the Will and Power of God have no <sup>f</sup> Command Inwardly either upon the *Wisdom* and *Knowledge* of God, or upon the ethical and Moral Disposition of his Nature, which is his *Essential Goodness*; but the Sphere of its Activity is <sup>g</sup> without God, where it hath an Absolute Command upon the Existences of things; and is always Free, tho' not always In-different, since it is its greatest Perfection to be determined by *Infinite Wisdom* and *Infinite Goodness*. But this is to anticipate what according to the Laws of Method should follow afterward in another Place.

<sup>f</sup> Imperium ad intra.

<sup>g</sup> Extra Deum.





## B O O K II.

## C H A P. I.

I.



OW the Demonstrative Strength of our Cause lying plainly in this, That it is not possible that any thing should Be without a Nature, and the Natures or Essences of all things being Immutable, therefore upon Supposition that there is any thing Really Just or Unjust, <sup>a</sup> *Due or unlawful*, there must of necessity be something so both Naturally and Immutably, which no Law, Decree, Will, nor Custom can alter. There have not wanted some among the Old Philosophers, that rather than they would acknowledge any thing *Immutably Just or Unjust*, would not stick to shake the very Foundations of all things, and to deny that there was any Immutable Nature or Essence of any thing, and by Consequence any absolute

<sup>a</sup> *Debitum or Ilicitum.*

Certainty

Certainty of Truth or Knowledge ; maintaining this strange Paradox, that Both all *Being* and *Knowledge* was Phantastical and Relative only, and therefore that Nothing was *Good* or *Evil*, *Just* or *Unjust*, *True* or *False*, *White* or *Black*, absolutely and Immutably, but Relatively to every Private Person's Humour or Opinion.

2. THE Principal Assessor of this Extravagant Opinion was *Protagoras* the Abderite, who, as *Plato* instructs us in his *Theætetus*, held, <sup>b</sup> *That nothing was any thing in itself Absolutely, but was always made so to something else, and Essence or Being was to be removed from every thing.* In which Position of his there seems to be these two things asserted: *First*, That all things were in Perpetual Motion, and nothing had any <sup>c</sup> *being*, but *a possibility to be*, which the said *Protagoras* thus expressed, <sup>d</sup> *All things are made by Motion and Mixture of things together, and therefore are not rightly said to Be; for nothing Is, but every thing is always Made.*

<sup>b</sup> οὐδὲ εἴναι εἴ τινι καὶ τινὶ αὐτὸ, ἀλλὰ τινὶ αὐτὸ γίγνεσθαι. τὸ δὲ εἴναι πανταχόθεν ἐξαρπάζεσθαι.

<sup>c</sup> Eſt, but Fieri.

<sup>d</sup> Ἐπεὶ δὲ διὸ Φορᾶς τε καὶ κατόπτες καὶ γράφεταις πρὸς ἄλληλα γίγνεται, ἡ δὲ φαντεῖ εἴναι εἴ τινι διδῷ προσαγορευούσες.

40 *Concerning Eternal and*

*Secondly, That nothing is Made Absolutely, but only Relatively to something else.* If any one say that any thing either is or is made, he must say that it is so to something, or in Respect of some Body, for we cannot affirm that any thing either is or is made Absolutely in itself, but Relatively to something else.

Now from hence proceeded those known Aphorisms of his, recorded both in *Plato* and *Aristotle*, <sup>f</sup> *That those things which appear to every one, are to him to whom they appear.* And <sup>g</sup> again, *That every Fancy or Opinion of every Body was true.* And again, <sup>h</sup> *That Man is the Measure of all things whether existing or not existing.* Which Sentence seemed so pretty and argute to him, that he placed it in the very Front of his Book, as *Plato* tells us; and indeed it comprizeth in it all the Singularity of his Philosophy, the true meaning thereof being this; Not only that Man taken generally is the Measure of all

<sup>f</sup> Εἰτε τις εἴδει τι ὄντος, τινὶ ἔσται, οὐ τινὸς, οὐ πρός τι, ἀντίον ἀνταῖ, αὐτεὶ γέγονθαι· αὐτὸ δὲ εἰφάντε περὶ οὐ οὐ γεγονόμενον, αὐτεὶ αὐτῷ λεκίσιον γέτε πάλιν λόγους ἀποδεικίσειν.

<sup>g</sup> Τὰ φανόμενα ἵνασθη πᾶστι καὶ εἴδαι τύτω φαίνεται.

<sup>h</sup> Πᾶσα φαντασία εἰσὶν ἀληθής.

<sup>h</sup> Πάντων χρημάτων μέτρον ἀνθρώποι εἴσαι, τῶν μὲν ὄντων ὡς εἴσαι, τῶν δὲ μὴ ὄντων ὡς εἰς εἴσων.

things,

things, (which in some Sense might be affirmed, that our own Humane Faculties are the Measure of all things unto us) but also that <sup>i</sup> *Every Individual Man is the Measure of all Being and Truth* respectively to himself; for so the following Words in *Plato* explain it: <sup>k</sup> *Your meaning (saith Socrates) is this, That as every thing appears to me, such it is to me; and as it appears to you, such it is to you, both of us being alike men.* Wherefore it is elsewhere expressed after this manner, <sup>l</sup> *That every man is the Measure of What is and is not, that is, to himself, and <sup>m</sup> That every one is the Measure of his own Wisdom to himself.* *Sextus Empiricus* gives a short account of this *Protagorean Philosophy* in a few Words thus, <sup>n</sup> *He asserts that, which seems to every one, to be, and so makes all things Relative.* Now this was an Higher strain of Madness than the *Pyrrhonian Scepticism*, which was not so extravagant as to affirm, that all things were Phantastical and Relative

<sup>i</sup> Πᾶς ἄνθρωπος.

<sup>k</sup> Οὐκέντις ἄτοις, πως λέγεται ὡς ὅτι μὲν ἔκαστος ἡμῶν φαίνεται, τοιοῦτος μὲν ἔτινι ἡμῖν· ὅτι δὲ σοι, τοιοῦτα ἐν σοι ἄνθρωπος, δι τούτου καὶ γένεται.

<sup>l</sup> Μέτρον ἔκαστος ἡμῶν μὲν τὰν τε ὄγκους καὶ μή.

<sup>m</sup> Μέτρον εἶδος αὐτῷ ἔκαστον αὐτῷ σοφίας.

<sup>n</sup> Τιθητι τὰ φαινόμενα ἵκεσθαι, καὶ ὅτις ἴσταται τὸ πρὸς τι.

only; but that we could not affirm what things absolutely were in their own Nature, but only what they seemed to us.

3. But that all this was chiefly intended as a Battery or Assault against Morality, and Principally levelled by *Protagoras* against the Absolute and Immutable Natures of Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, appeareth also from sundry Passages of that learned Dialogue called *Theætetus*. <sup>o</sup> Tell me therefore, dost thou in good Earnest think that nothing Is Good or Honest, but is always made so? And afterwards *Protagoras* affirms; <sup>p</sup> That whatsoever things seem to be Good and Just to every City or Commonwealth, the same are so to that City or Commonwealth so long as they seem so. Again, p. 172. <sup>q</sup> Whatsoever things any City thinking doth decree to be Honest or Dishonest, Just or Unjust, Holy or Unholy, those things are really or truly such to that City; and in such things as these no one Private Person or City is.

<sup>o</sup> Ed Serrani, p. 157. λέγε τόντι πάλιν εἰ τὸις ἀρέσκει τὸ μῆτε σῖναι, ἀλλὰ οὐγρεθεῖται ἀνεὶ ἀγαθὸν καὶ καλὸν.

<sup>p</sup> P. 167. οἵα γ' ἀν ἐκάστη πόλει δίκαια καὶ καλὰ δοκῆ, ταῦτα καὶ σῖναι ἀντῆ, ἔως ἂν ἀντὰ νομίζῃ.

<sup>q</sup> Καλὰ μὲν καὶ ἀνίχνα, δίκαια καὶ ἀδίκα, καὶ ὅσια καὶ μὴ, οἷα ἀν ἐκάστη πόλει οὐκθεῖσα θῆται νόμιμα ἐαντῆ, ταῦτα καὶ σῖναι τῇ ἀληθείᾳ ἐκέστη καὶ ἐν τύποις μὲν καὶ δὲ σοφωτερον ὡς ιδιώτηι ιδιώτις, ὡς πόλιν πόλεως σῖναι.

wiser than another, because none of these things have any Nature or Essence of their own, being meerly Phantastical and Relative. Lastly, To name no more Places, p. 177. The thing that we were about to shew was this, that they which made the Natures and Essences of all things, Flowing and Mutable, and which held that what seemed to every body, was that to whom it so seemed, as they do maintain this concerning all other things, so concerning nothing more than Just and Unjust, as being unquestionably true of these, that whatsoever any City thinks to be Good and Just, and decrees them such, these things are so to that City, so long as they are so decreed.

## C H A P. II.

I. WHEREFORE, since in order to the taking away of the Immutable Natures of Good and Evil, Just and Unjust,

<sup>1</sup> οὐκ ἔστι φύσις ἀντῶν γένεν ἔστιαν ἐαυτῆς ἔχον.

<sup>2</sup> ἔχειν ἐνταῦθα παντὶ ἡμεν τῷ λόγῳ σὺν ὁ ἔφαμεν τὸς τὴν Φερομένην ἔστιαν λέγοντας, καὶ τὸ ἄλλο δοῦλον ἐκπέμπω, τότο καὶ εἶναι τέτο φῶ δοκεῖ, οὐ μὲν τοῖς ἄλλοις ἐθέλειν διὰ διηγημάτων, καὶ οὐκ ἔχειν περὶ τὰ δίκαια καὶ παντὸς μαστίλων, ἀλλὰ διὰ διηγημάτων δοξάσαι αὐτῷ, ταῦτα καὶ ἔστι δίκαια τιθεμένη ἐωσπερ ἀντέκειται.

and

and the Moral Differences of Humane Actions, there was so strange an Attempt made by these Philosophers to overthrow the Absolute Essences and Truths of all things ; let us in the next place consider what Pretences, or Grounds they could possibly have for maintaining of so wild a Paradox as this is.

First, THEREFORE, it is Evident from *Plato's Writings*, that *Protagoras* laid his Foundation in the Heraclitical Philosophy, at that time in great vogue and request in the World, which did, <sup>a</sup> as that Philosopher writes, *bring in a Floating and Moveable Essence*, and maintained <sup>b</sup> *That nothing stood, but all things moved and flowed*. An Opinion which most of the Ancients were inclining to, as appears from the Poets, who made <sup>c</sup> *all things to be the Off-spring of Flux and Motion* : In so much that *Homer* himself (as *Plato* observes) deriving the Pedigree of the Gods, made the *Ocean* their Father, and *Tethys* their Mother <sup>d</sup>.

AND there were not any Philosophers of Note, besides *Parmenides* and *Melissius*, that

<sup>a</sup> Πρωτομένην μόνον οὐσίαν γενέσυται.

<sup>b</sup> οὐδὲν οἰσται, πάντα δὲ κινεῖσθαι.

<sup>c</sup> Πάντα ἵκενται ρόντε τε καὶ κινεῖσθαι.

<sup>d</sup> Σπέντερον τε Θαῦμα γενεστεῖ, καὶ μητέρα Τήθυν.

opposed

opposed it, who also ran into another Extreme: And therefore the former of these *Plato* facetiously calls <sup>c</sup> *the Flowing Philosophers*, the latter <sup>f</sup> *the Standers*. Now the true meaning of this Heraclitical Philosophy was plainly this; That there is no other Being in the World besides Individual Body or Matter, and no such thing as <sup>e</sup> *standing Intelligible Forms*, that is, no Intellectual Being; which Matter or Corporeal Being as it is liable to Motion and Mutation because of its Divisibility, every Part of it being separable from another; so by the Mutation that we find in all Corporeal Things, we may reasonably conclude, that it is throughout perpetually moved and agitated by Streams and subtle Matter passing the Pores of all Bodies; whence it was that they affirmed <sup>h</sup> *that all Things flowed like a Stream*; and that there was no Stability either of Essence or Knowledge any where to be found. For that *Cratylus* and *Heraclitus* endeavoured to destroy the Certainty of all Science from this Principle, is evident in that they main-

<sup>c</sup> Τοις φόρτας.

<sup>f</sup> Στασιώτας.

<sup>e</sup> Ειδη.

<sup>h</sup> Οινοί φύματα κατεύθυνται πάντα.

tained that Contradictories might be true concerning the same thing, and at the same time. And indeed if there were no other Being in the World but Individual Matter, and all Knowledge proceeded from the Impresses of that Matter, That being always agitated, it is not conceivable how there could be any Stability of Knowledge any more than of Essence found in this Rapid Whirlpool of Corporeal Things ; nay, nor how there should be any such thing as Knowledge at all. Wherefore according to this *Heraclitical* Philosophy, *Protagoras* in the first Place concluded <sup>i</sup> That Knowledge is nothing else but Sense ; For as *Plato* writes, <sup>k</sup> These two Assertions come all to one, That all things flow like a Stream, and that Knowledge and Sense are one and the self-same thing.

2. But *Protagoras* went further, and made a Superstructure upon this *Heraclitical* Philosophy out of the Old Atomical or *Phe-nician* Philosophy, which clearly asserted, That all those sensible Qualities, as they are called, of *Heat* and *Cold*, *Light* and *Colours*,

<sup>i</sup> "Οτι ἐπισήμη ἐκ ἄλλο τι ἐγίνεται αἰσθητοῖς.

<sup>k</sup> Εἰς τάντον συμπιπτώκε οὐν ρέματα κινεῖσθ τὰ πάντα, τῇ δι-  
δοσιν ἐπισήμη γέγενεται.

Sounds, Odours and Sapours, formally considered, are not things really and absolutely existing without us, but only Passions, Sensations and Phantasms in us, occasioned by certain local Motions made upon the Organs of Sense from the Objects without us, and so indeed but Relative and Phantastical Things. And thus *Protagoras* made up his Business compleat from this Mixture of the *Heraclitical* and *Atomical* Philosophy together; for taking it for granted according to *Heraclitus's* Doctrine, That Knowledge is nothing else but Sense, and according to the *Phenician* or *Atomical* Philosophy, That the Sensible Qualities are not Things really and absolutely Existing without us, but Appearances or Sensations in us, he concluded <sup>1</sup> all *Sensible and Intelligible things* not to be absolute Essences, but things meerly Relative, Phantastical and Imaginary.

<sup>1</sup> Πάντα τὰ νοητὰ καὶ ἀνοητά.

## C H A P. III.

I. **N**OW that this *Atomical, Corpuscular or Mechanical Philosophy*, that solves all the *Phænomena* of the Corporeal World by those Intelligible Principles of *Magnitude, Figure, Site and Motion*, and thereby makes Sensible things intelligible, banishing away those Unintelligible Corporeal Forms and Sensible Qualities, was known to *Protagoras*, who lived not only before *Plato* and *Aristotle*, but also before *Democritus himself*, as *Plutarch* testifies, (tho' he abused it, in grounding so strange a Paradox upon it) I shall make it undeniably evident from several Testimonies out of *Plato's Theætetus*; for besides that Passage afore-mention'd, <sup>a</sup> p. 152. *That all things are made by local Motion and Mixture with one another*, and what follows after, <sup>b</sup> *That Motion is that which makes every thing to seem to be, or to be*

<sup>a</sup> Ἐξ δὲ δὴ Φορᾶς τε καὶ κινήσεως καὶ κράσις πρὸς ἀλλήλα γίγνεται πάντα.

<sup>b</sup> Τὸ μὲν εἶτα δοκεῖ καὶ τὸ γίγνεται κίνησις παρέχεται.

generated, p. 153. He plainly describes the Nature of Colours according to this very Hypothesis, ‘ The Sense whereof is this, Let us begin first with the Eyes or Sight : That which is called a White Colour, is not any Real Quality existing either without the Eyes or in the Eyes ; for then it would not consist only in Motion and Generation : But taking it for granted that no Sensible thing is such absolutely in it self, we must say that a White and Black Colour, and every other Colour is generated by certain Motions made and impressed upon the Eye, and every Colour is neither that which makes the Impression, nor that which receiveth it ; (that is, neither any thing in the Eye nor in the Object absolutely) but a certain Middle thing between them both, which can be nothing else but a Passion or Sensation in us. Elsewhere in that Dialogue he proves this Assertion, That Colours and the like Sensible things are no Real and Absolute Qualities

‘ ΣΩ. οπόλαβε τοίνυν ὡς ἄριστος ὑπερί ταῖς κατὰ τὰς ὄμματας πρᾶτος. ὃ δὴ καλέεις χρῶμα λευκὸν, μὴ ἔπειτα ἀντὸς ἔτερον παρέχειν τῶν σῶν ὄμματος, μηδὲν ἐν τοῖς ὄμμασσι μηδὲ την αὐτὴν χάρακα ἀποτάξεις. οὐδὲ γὰρ ἀλλα μίνοι, καὶ ἐκάλει τὴν γενέσεις γίγνοντο. Θείατ. Ἀλλὰ πῶς; Σω. Ἐπώμενα τῷ ἄρτι λόγῳ, μηδὲν ἀντὸς καθ’ αὐτὸν ἐν ὅν τιθέτες, καὶ ἡμῖν ὑπερ ταῖς μέλαντες καὶ λευκὸν Εἰ ὅτιον ἄλλο χρᾶμα ἐκ τῆς προσθετῆς τῶν ὄμματος πρὸς τὴν προσήκεται φορὰν φαῖται γεγενημένον. Εἰ δὲ δὴ ἔπειτο ἔπειται φάμεν χρῶμα, γέτε τὸ προσθέτον, γέτε τὸ προσθετο- μένον ἴσι, ἀλλὰ μεταξύ τι ἕκαστον ἴδιον γεγονός. p. 158.

either in the Sentient or in the Object, because the same Object seems to have different qualities to Different Persons, as <sup>a</sup> *The same Wind blowing seems Cold to one and Warm to another; and the same Wine which to one in Health seems Sweet, will to the same Person appear bitter and distasteful if he be sick.* Whence he concluded that *Heat and Cold, Sweet and Bitter,* were not things Really and Absolutely existing in the Objects without, but Relative things, being Passions or Sensations that may be diversify'd by the different Tempers and Complexions of the Body.

2. Afterward, p. 156. we have the Sum of this *Atomical or Mechanical Philosophy*, more copiously and fully set down after this manner, *The beginning upon which all things depend is this;*

<sup>a</sup> Πνεόνιος ἀτέμης τοῦ ἀντρὸς ὁ μὲν ἡμῶν ρήγοις, ὁ δὲ γ. Εἰ ὁ μὲν ἡρέμων, ὁ δὲ σφόδρα.

<sup>c</sup> Ἀρχὴ δὲ ἐξ ἡς Εἰ ἀ νῦν δῆτι ἐλέγομεν πάντα ἡρτῆται, ἢδε ἀνταν. Ων τὸ πᾶν κινήσις ἡν, Εἰ ἀλλο παρὰ τέτο γέδεν. Εἰσὶ δὲ κινήσεις δύο ἔσθι, πλήθει ἢ ἀπειρον ἑκάτερον, δύναμιν δὲ τὸ μὲν ποιεῖν ἔχον, τὸ δὲ πάσχειν. Εκ δὲ τῆς τύτων ὄμιλίας τε Εἰ τρίψεις πρὸς ἀλληλα, γίγνεται ἔχοντα, πλήθει ἢ ἀπειρα, δίδυμα δέ τὸ μὲν ἀισθητὸν, τὸ δὲ ἀισθητις, οἷς συνεκπίπτεται Εἰ γεννωμένη μετὰ τοῦ ἀισθητοῦ. Αἱ μὲν δὲ ἀισθητις τὰ τοιάδε ὑμῶν ἔχοντιν ὄνοματα, τρίψεις τε Εἰ ἀκοαι καὶ ὀσφενσις, Εἰ ψυχεις τε Εἰ κάνυσις, Εἰ κιδοναι γε δὲ Εἰ λυπαὶ Εἰ ἐπιθυμίας Εἰ φόβοι κακλημέναι. Καὶ ἀλλει ἀπέραντοι μὲν αἱ ἀνάνυμαται, παμπληθεῖς δὲ αἱ ἀναμαρμέναι. Τὸ δὲ ἀν ἀισθητὸν γένοντα τύτων ἑκάσταις ὄμογονον.

this; That the whole World is Motion, and nothing else besides. Now of Motion there are two kinds, each of which containeth innumerable Branches under it; but the Power of one is Action, of the other Passion. From the mutual Congress and Contrition of both which together, are begotten innumerable Offsprings, which may all be reduced to these two General heads, whereof the one the Sensible, the other Sense, which is always joined together with the Sensible. The Senses have such Names as these, Sight, Hearing, Tasting, Touching, Pleasures, Pains, Desires, Fears, and others innumerable without Names, but many that have Names. The Sensible Kind doth answer and correspond to every one of these; To the Sight all manner of Colours,

"Οψις μὲν παντοδιεπᾶντα χρῶματα παντοδιπάντα ἀκοαῖς δὲ ἀσαύτως φωναῖς, Εἰ ταῖς ἀλλαῖς αἰσθήσεσι τὰ ἀλλα αἰσθήτα ξυγγεῖν γιγνόμενος. — ἐν Φορᾷ ἀνταντάν οὐ κίνησις πέφυκεν. Ἐπειδὲν οὐδὲ ὄμιμα Εἰ ἀλλό τι τῶν τύτων συμμιετρων πλησιάσαν γενητὴ τὸν λεικότητα τε Εἰ αἰσθήσις ἀντῆ ξύμιφυτον, ἀλλὰ οὐ ποτὲ ἐγένετο, ἐκατέρης ἐκένων πρὸς ἄλλο ἐλθόντῳ, τότε δὲ μεταξὺ Φερομένων [τῆς μὲν ὄψεως πρὸς τὸν ὄφθαλμον, τῆς δὲ λεικότητον πρὸς τὸ συναποτίκτοντὸν τὸ χρῶμα] οὐ μὲν ὄφθαλμὸς ἀρετὴ ὄψεως ἐμπλεως ἐγένετο, καὶ ὅρα δὲ τότε, Εἰ ἐγένετο γάτε ὄψις, ἀλλὰ ὄφθαλμὸς ὄραν. τὸ δὲ συγγενῆτον τὸ χρῶμα, λεικότητον περιεπλήσθη, καὶ ἐγένετο καὶ λεικότης ἀν, ἀλλὰ λεικὸν, οἵτε ξύλοι οἵτε λίθοι οἵτε ὄτιγνα συνέβη χρῶμα χρωσθῆναι τῷ τοιότῳ χρῶματι. Καὶ τὰλλα δὲ οὕτω σκληρὸν καὶ θερμὸν, Εἰ πάντα τὸν ἀντὸν τρόπον ὑποληπτίον, ἀντὸν μὲν καθ' ἀντὸν μηδὲν ἔναι, δὲ δὲ Εἰ τότε ἐλέγομεν, εὐ δὲ τῷ πρὸς ἄλληλα ὄμιλοι πάντα γίγνεσθαι Εἰ παντοῖς ἀπὸ τῆς κίνησεως.

52 Concerning Eternal and

to the Hearing Sounds, and to the other Senses other Sensibles, that are of kin to them. -- When therefore the Eye, and some other thing analogous to it, meet together, they beget Whiteness, and a certain Sense proportionable thereunto, neither of which would have been made, if either of these had not met with the other. Then these things being carried respectively, Sight to the Eyes, and Whiteness to the Object, which did actively beget it, the Eye becomes full of Sight, and sees, and is not made Sight in the Abstract, but an Eye seeing; and that which did Congenerate the Colour, is fitted with Whiteness, and is made, not Whiteness in the Abstract, but a thing White, whether Wood or Stone. The same is to be conceived of all other Sensible things, as Hard and Hot, and the like, that nothing is by it self absolutely any of these things, but they are all made from a Mutual Congress of the Outward Object and the Sense, by means of Motion.

3. **H**E **R**E we see it plainly asserted, that the Whole World is made by nothing else but the Motion of Particles, by means of which all things are Generated and Corrupted; neither did *Protagoras* acknowledge any other Motion but local, as is plainly intimated: And that all these Sensible Qualities which we

take notice of by the several Senses, as *Colours*, *Sounds*, *Sapors*, *Odours*, and the like, are not things really existing without us, but Passions or Sensations in us, caused by several Local Motions upon the Organs of Sense. Which, if that be not sufficient that I have already alledged, is yet more plainly expressed after this manner, p. 182. <sup>f</sup> *Nothing is absolutely any one thing by it self, neither the Agent nor the Patient, but from both of these meeting together, are generated at once both the Senses and the Sensible things.*

4. THESE Passages which I have cited are so clear and evident, that they cannot possibly be capable of any other Sense than what I have expressed; and therefore those two *Latin* Interpreters *Ficinus* and *Serranus*, that lived before the Restitution of this Mechanical Philosophy, and therefore understood it not, yet expound them after the same manner. The first thus, <sup>g</sup> *Colour is neither the Sight of the Eyes, nor the Motion of Bodies,*

<sup>f</sup> Μήποτε γέ ὅτι ἔτεις ἐλέγομεν, ἐν μηδὲν ἀντὸν καθ' αὐτὸν ἔναι, μηδὲ ἀν τὸ ποιεῖν οὐ πάχον, ἀλλ' εἰς ἀμφοτέρων πρὸς ἄλληλα συγγεννομένων ταῖς ἀνταντέσσι, Ε τὰ ἀνταντὰ ἀποτικτόνταν, τὰ μὲν ποιεῖται γίγνεσθαι, τὰ δὲ ἀντανόμενα.

<sup>g</sup> *Color neque Oculorum aspectus est, neque corporum motus, sed ex aspectu motuque medium quiddam resulvens;*  
Id est, talis circa Oculos Passio.

but a certain middle thing resulting from the Sight and Motion, that is, such a Passion about the Eyes. The other in this manner: <sup>b</sup> That from the different Disposition of the Beholder, and so the different Affection of the Intermediate Sensible Organ, the various Colours are both made and seen, but so as that they are all Phantastical, nor have any Subsistence but in the Mind, are varied by the different Congress of Motion, which is to be concluded concerning all the Senses. Only Protagoras, in order to his Sceptical Design, made these Sensible things not only Relative to Animals in General, but also to Individuals, because it is Impossible to demonstrate, as he urges, that all Brute Beasts, nay, that any two Men have the very same Phantasms or Ideas of Red or Green, these being Idiopathies, and because Experience shews, that not only the Gratefulness and Ungratefulness of Tastes and Smells, but also that Heat and Cold are Relative to Individuals.

<sup>b</sup> Ex varia aspicientis ~~dispositione~~, variaque adeo Intermedii Sensibilis Schesi, Colores varios & videri & fieri, ita tamen ut omnia sint ~~phantasmata~~, nec nisi in animo subsistant, vario autem Motus congressu variantur; quod de omnibus Sensibus constituendum est.

## C H A P. IV.

I. **W**HEREFORE we have made it evident, that that very *Mechanical* or *Atomical* Philosophy, that hath been lately restored by *Cartesius* and *Gassendus*, as to the main Substance of it, was not only elder than *Epicurus*, but also than *Plato* and *Aristotle*, nay, than *Democritus* and *Leucippus* also, the commonly reputed Fathers of it. And therefore we have no Reason to discredit the Report of *Posidonius the Stoick*, who, as *Strabo* tells us, affirmed this *Atomical Philosophy* to have been antienter than the Times of the *Trojan War*, and first to have been brought into *Greece* out of *Phenicia*. <sup>i</sup> If we may believe *Posidonius the Stoick*, the *Doctrine of Atoms* is antienter than the Times of the *Trojan War*, and was first invented and deliver'd by one *Moschus a Sidonian*, or rather a *Phe- nician*, as <sup>k</sup> *Sextus Empiricus* cites the Testi-

<sup>i</sup> Lib. 16. Edit. Casaub. p. 757.

<sup>k</sup> Εἰ δὲ πιστός τοῦ Ποσιδονίου, γὰρ πιστὸν τὸν ἀτόμων δόγμα παλαιὸν ἐξίν, ἀνδρὸς Σιδονίου Μόχυ τῷ τῶν Τροϊκῶν χερνῶν γεγονότος.

## 56 Concerning Eternal and

mony of *Posidonius*. <sup>1</sup> Democritus and Epicurus invented the *Doctrine of Atoms*, unless we make that *Physiology* to be antienter, and derive it, as *Posidonius* the Stoick doth, from one *Moschus*, a Phenician <sup>2</sup>. And since it is certain from what we have shewed, that neither *Epicurus* nor yet *Democritus* were the first Inventors of this *Physiology*, this Testimony of *Posidonius* the Stoick ought in Reason to be admitted by us.

2. Now what can be more probable than that this *Moschus* the *Phenician*, that *Posidonius* speaks of, is the very same Person with that *Moschus* the *Physiologer*, that *Jamblichus* mentions in the Life of *Pythagoras*, where he affirms, that *Pythagoras* living some time at *Sidon* in *Phenicia*, conversed with the Prophets that were the Successors of *Mochus* the *Physiologer*, and was instructed by them, <sup>3</sup> *He conversed with the Prophets that were the Successors of Mochus and other Phenician Priests*. And what can be more certain than

<sup>1</sup> *Advers. Mathemat.* p. 367.

<sup>2</sup> Δημόκριτος δὲ καὶ Ἐπίκουρος ἀπόμνυε, εἰ μάτι ἀρχαιοτέραν ταῦτα θητέον την δόξαν, καὶ ἀς ἐλεγεν ὁ Σταῦρος Ποτιδεύων, ἀπὸ Μόχυ την ἀνδρὸς Φοίνικος καταγομένην.

<sup>3</sup> Τοῖς τε Μάχη τε Φυσιολόγος προφήταις ἀπογόνοις καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις καὶ Φοίνικηοις ἴσροφάγταις.

that

that both *Mochus* and *Moschus*, the *Phenician* and Philosopher, was no other than *Moses* the *Jewish Lawgiver*, as *Arcerius* rightly guesses, <sup>◦ It seems that it ought to be read</sup> *Moschus*, unless any had rather read it *Mochus* or *Moses*. Wherefore according to the Antient Tradition, *Moschus* or *Moses* the *Phenician* being the First Author of the *Atomical Philosophy*, it ought to be called neither *Epicurean* nor *Democritical*, but *Moschical* or *Mosaical*.

3. IT must be acknowledged, that neither of these two Famous and Renowned Philosophers, *Plato* and *Aristotle*, had the good Hap to be rightly and thoroughly instructed in this antient *Phenician* and *Moschical* or *Mosaical* Philosophy; *Protagoras* so much abusing it to *Scepticism*, and the taking away of the Natural Discrimination of Good and Evil, might probably beget a Prejudice in *Plato* against it, tho' he doth not confute the Physiological Part of it in all his *Theætetus*, where Good Occasion was offer'd him; And yet in his *Timæus* he hath a little Smattering of it, where he endeavours to resolve the Differences of the Four Elements, *Fire*, *Air*, *Water*, *Earth*,

◦ *Mochus* legendum videtur, nisi quis *Mochus* vel *Moschus* legere malit.

into the Different Geometrical Figures of their Insensible Parts, making the small Particles of the *Earth* to be Cubical, by reason of their Solidity and Immobility, but of the *Fire*, *Pyramidal*<sup>p</sup>. <sup>q</sup> *It is reasonable that that Figure which bath the smallest Bases, should be attributed to that Body which is most moving, cutting and piercing.* And that he doth not mean Mystically in this, but Physically, appears from his own Explication of it concerning the Insensible Parts, p. 56. <sup>r</sup> *These Cubes and Pyramids in the Earth and the Fire can only be perceived by the Mind and Understanding, since the single Particles alone are not Sensible, but only the Aggregation of many of them together.*

4. **B**UT Aristotle plainly rejects it. *Jacobus Carpentarius*, in his Notes upon *Alcinous*, treating of the Nature of Universals, writes thus. <sup>s</sup> *Some do not altogether deny Universals, but*

<sup>p</sup> Pag. 55. Ser. Edit.

<sup>q</sup> Τὸν ἔχον ὀλιγίστας βάσεις ἐνκυνητάτον ἀνάγκη πεφυκέναι, τριπ-  
τικώτατον τε ὀξύτατον δέ πάντη πάντων.

<sup>r</sup> Πάντα δέν ταῦτα διανοεῖσθαι σμικρὰ οὐτως ὡς καθ' ἓν ἔκαστον  
μὲν τὸ γάντις ἔκαστα διὰ σμικρότητα καθ' ὄργανον ὑφ' ἡμῶν, συγ-  
θεούσθενταν δέ πολλῶν τὰς ὅγκους οὐτῶν ὀρᾶσθαι.

<sup>s</sup> *Quidam Universalia non omnino quidem tollunt, sed ea tantum esse volunt quando intelliguntur, nihil vero haberi in Natura*

but will have it that they only are when they are understood, but that there is nothing in Nature which answers to the Notion of the Mind. Which to me indeed is the same thing as if they should say that Colours are not in their Nature *Actually* any thing, but are made such when they are in very *Deed* seen. Which Opinion also hath had its *Assertors*, but is condemned by Aristotle. This Opinion, that Colours are not actually existent according to those very Ideas that we have of them before Vision, is the <sup>1</sup> *Mystery* of the Old *Atomical* or *Mosaical* Philosophy, which *Carpentarius* understood not; which makes them not Qualities absolutely existing without us, but Passions and Sensations in us. And indeed this Philosophy is condemned by *Aristotle*, in his Third Book <sup>2</sup> *Of the Soul*, c. 2. and that as the received Doctrine of the antient Physiologists before his Time. <sup>3</sup> *The Former Physiologists*,

Natura quod Mentis Notioni respondeat: Quod mihi sane perinde est ac si dicarent Colores nihil actu esse, sed tales effici quando re ipsa videntur. Quæ etiam Opinio suos habuit Assertores, sed ab Aristotele est damnata.

<sup>1</sup> *Arcanum.*

<sup>2</sup> *De anima.*

<sup>3</sup> Οι πρότεροι φυσιολόγοι τῦτο οὐ καλῶς ἔλεγον, καὶ οὐ οἰωνεῖον ἔτε λειπόντες οὐτε μάλιστα τέττα εἶχον, οὐδὲ χαρήτερον γένεσιν.

*Concerning Eternal and  
faith he, were (generally) mistaken in this,  
in that they thought Blackness and Whiteness  
were no absolute Qualities without the Sight,  
nor Sweet and Sowre without the Taste. Again,  
he endeavours to confute the same Philosophy  
which resolves those Sensible Qualities into  
Figures, Site and Motion of Particles; not  
only attributing it to Democritus, but also  
making it the most generally received Phy-  
siology before his Time. <sup>y</sup> Democritus and  
most of the Physiologers Commit a Great Absur-  
dity in this, in that they make all Sense to be  
Touch; which is a thing at first Sight plainly  
impossible. Moreover, they do not distinguish  
betwixt the Objects common to all the Senses,  
and those which are proper and peculiar to the  
several Senses apart. For Magnitude and Fi-  
gure, Roughness and Smoothness, Sharpness  
and Bluntness, which belong to Bulk, are Com-*

<sup>y</sup> Δημόκριτος καὶ οἱ πλεῖστοι τῶν φυσιολόγων ἀποκάτατόν τι ποιῶσιν  
πάντα γράπτες αἰσθητὰ ποιεῖσθαι. Καὶ τοις ἐις καὶ τότο ὄντας ἔχειν,  
δῆλον ὅτι καὶ τῶν ἄλλων αἰσθήσεων ἐπέστη αἴφη τις ἔξι τότο δὲ ὅτις ἔξι  
ἡδύπατος, ἢ χαλεπὸν συνιδεῖν. <sup>z</sup> Ετι δὲ τοῖς κοινοῖς τῶν αἰσθήσεων πα-  
σῶν χρῶνται ὡς ιδίοις. Μέγαδος γράπτει οὐδὲν, καὶ τὸ τραχὺ οὐ τὸ λεῖον,  
ἔτι δὲ τὸ δέρμα οὐ τὸ ὄμυβλον τὸ ἐν τοῖς ὄγκοις κοινὰ τῶν αἰσθήσεων ἔστι,  
εἰ δὲ μὴ πασῶν, ἀλλὰ ὄψεως γε καὶ αἴφης, οἱ δὲ τὰ ιδία σύνταῦθε  
ἀνάγκησιν ὀσπερ Δημόκριτος. Τὸ γράπτειν καὶ τὸ μέλαν, τὸ μὲν τραχὺν  
φυσικὸν ἔναιται, τὸ δὲ λεῖον. Εἰς δὲ τὰ χρήματα ἀνάγει τὰς Χυρὰς, καί-  
τοι οὐδημάτις οὐδὲν τῆς ὄψεως τὰ κοινὰ γνωσίζειν.

mon to all the Senses; or if not to all, yet to Sight and Touch. Whereas our Sense is deceived concerning these Common Objects, but it is never deceived concerning the proper Objects of the several Senses, as the Sight is not deceived about Colours, nor the Hearing about Sounds. But most of the antient Physiologists refer these Proper Objects to the Common *Sensilia*; as *Democritus*, who, as for *White* and *Black*, makes one of them to consist in <sup>a</sup> Roughness and Ruggedness, the other in Smoothness and Evenness of Parts. He also reduceth *Sapors* to Figures, tho' it belong chiefly to Sight to take Cognizance of Figures and Magnitude, and the like; whereas according to this Philosophy, the Sense of Touch would be the most Critical of them. Aristotle there concludes this Discourse, with two General Arguments against that Philosophy (that made the Sensible Qualities to be Properly Sensations in Us, and nothing else in the Objects without us but *Magnitude, Figure, Site of Parts and Motion*) in this manner, <sup>b</sup> That there is Contrariety in

<sup>a</sup> Scabrities.

<sup>b</sup> Ετι πὲ μὲν ἀισθητὰ πάντα ἵχει ἐνεπίσωται, οἷον εὖ χρόματι τῷ μέλανι τὸ λευκὸν, καὶ εὖ χυμοῖς τὸ γλυκὺ τῷ πικρῷ, οὐκέτι δὲ χρήματι εὐδοκεῖ εἶναι ἐνεπίσωται. τίνι γὰρ τῶν πολυγάνων τὸ περιφέρεις ἐνεπίσωται; Ετι δεπέρειν δύταν τῶν χημείατων, ἀναγκαῖον καὶ τὰς χυμοὺς εἶναι αὐτοῖς.

Qualities, but not in Figures; and that the Variety of Figures being Infinite, Tastes, Colours, and the rest would be so likewise. Which Arguments, tho' they be handsome and ingenious (that is, Aristotelical) to prove that there are such Entities as Qualities *Visible*, *Tangible*, *Tastable*, and the like really existing in the Objects without us; yet as they will not counterballance the Weight of those other Arguments that militate on the contrary Side, so they will without any Difficulty be answer'd by the Affertors of this *Novantique* Philosophy.

5. BUT after *Plato's* and *Aristotle's* Time, this Old Physiology was again revived by *Epicurus*, but so blended with Immorality and Impiety, as that it soon funk again, there being nothing left of all those Voluminous Treatises of *Epicurus* concerning it, saving what is preserved in *Diogenes Laertius*, nor no other System thereof transmitted to Posterity but what is comprized in the Poem of *Lucretius Carus*. So that the World was generally seiz'd with a deep and profound Oblivion of this Physiology, there being only some obscure Footsteps and dark Intimations of it now and then found in the Writings of some learned Authors. As when *Sextus* tells us that some of the

Stoicks held, <sup>c</sup> that Sensitive things were Relative to Animals, and depended upon our Sensation; and <sup>d</sup> That not the things themselves were comprehended by Sense, but only our Passions from them: And when the Pyrrhonian Scepticks themselves affirmed, <sup>e</sup> That all things are Relative, that is, to that which judges of them, and every thing appears to be according to Sense.

And when Plotinus makes a Doubt whether Sensible things did really exist in the Objects without us, or were only Passions within us <sup>f</sup>, <sup>g</sup> It may be well doubted concerning Sensible things themselves, that we seem to have the greatest Assurance of, whether they really exist in the Objects without us, or whether they be Passions in us.

6. But in this last Age it hath been so successfully restored by the Writings of some learned Authors, and the Truth thereof so

<sup>c</sup> Τὰ αἰσθητὰ ἔναις πρὸς π.

<sup>d</sup> Τὰ πάθη μόνα καταλαμβάνεσθαι.

<sup>e</sup> πάντα ἔναις πρὸς π., ταύταις πρὸς τὸ χείρον, οὐτὶ πρὸς πόδε τὸ ζῷον, καὶ τόνδε τὸν ἀνθρώπον, καὶ τύπος τὴν αἰσθήσιν ἔκαστον φάνεται.

<sup>f</sup> Enn. 5. Lib. 5.

<sup>g</sup> Ἐπὶ τὰ ἐπὶ τῆς αἰσθήσεως, ἀλλὰ δοκεῖ πίστιν ἔχειν ἴναργετέστην, ἀπιστεῖται μόνοτος αὐτὸς σὺ τοῖς ὑπερενομένοις, ἀλλὰ σὺ τοῖς πείθεσιν ἔχῃ τὴν δοκεῖσσιν ὑπόσασν, καὶ γοῦ δεῖ οὐδείς οὐδαίσας τῶν πρινόταν.

convincingly evidenced by many other Experiments besides that of the Glassy *Prisme* and *Rainbow*, that there is little Doubt left concerning it. And indeed unless this Philosophy be acknowledged to be true, we must of necessity affirm, that the Sensible and Corporeal World is altogether unintelligible. For as *Timæus Locrus* long ago observed, that <sup>1</sup> sensible things could not be apprehended any otherwise than <sup>2</sup> by *Sense and a certain kind of Spurious Reason*, so it is most certainly true that we cannot possibly have any clear and intelligible Ideas of *Heat* and *Cold*, *Light* and *Colours*, as such Qualities really existing in the Objects of Sense without us, but as Passions and Sensations in our selves we may. Wherefore unless we will assert that these lower Sensible things are <sup>3</sup> utterly *incomprehensible* to our Understanding, whilst it is able clearly to comprehend things of a higher Nature, we must conclude this Old *Atomical*, *Moschical* or *Mosaical* Philosophy to be true.

<sup>1</sup> περ αισθητα.

<sup>2</sup> αισθηται και νοηται λογισμοι.

<sup>3</sup> αικαταληπτα.

## C H A P. V.

I. **B**UT tho' this Old *Atomical* Philosophy be most solidly and substantially true, the Paradoxes that *Protagoras* and others endeavoured to ground upon it, are not only ridiculously absurd and contradictory in themselves, but also altogether inconsequent from the same.

FOR as for those Assertions, That whatever *seems is*, and that every *Fancy* is true; tho' they seem ridiculously absurd, yet those two learned Philosophers *Plato* and *Aristotle* vouchsafe them a serious Confutation. *Plato* from hence, in his *Theætetus*, because that the Fancies of them that dream would be as true and real as the Sensations of those that are awake; and that all Men would be alike Wise, and the Opinions of the most Illiterate Idiots in Geometry as true as any Geometrical Theorems, and all Predictions of future things alike true: And that in the Actions of Human Life, it would be indifferent what any Man did in order to any End, and so all Deliberation and Consultation cease.

BUT Aristotle, in his Metaphysics, with some Mixture of Facetiousness also writes after this manner, <sup>1</sup> *To those that put their Finger under their Sight or between their Eyes, it will be both two and one.* But Sextus Empiricus bestows more Subtilty upon it than either of them; <sup>m</sup> *If every Fancy be true, then when one fancies that every Fancy is not true, that must be true also, and so then this Proposition that every Fancy is true, will be false.*

2. WHEREAS the Meaning of these Assertions, *That whatever seems is, and every Fancy is true*, was no other than this, that Nothing was absolutely true at all, but that all Truth and Knowledge were but Seeming, fantastical and Relative things. And because one Seeming or Appearance is as true as another, therefore they were all equally true, that is to say, none of them true at all. This Aristotle elsewhere rightly apprehended, <sup>n</sup> *He that saith that all things that appear are true, makes all Beings to be Relative.*

<sup>1</sup> Ταῖς ὑπὸ τὴν ὄψιν ὑποβάλλεται τὸν διάκτιλον καὶ ποιῶσιν σὺν τῷ ἑνὸς φάντασται θέντο, δύο εἴναι δῆλο τὸ φάντασται ταῦτα, καὶ πάλιν ἐν τοῖς φρήμην κινεῖσθαι τὴν ὄψιν ἐν φάντασται τὸ θέντο.

<sup>m</sup> Εἰ πάντα φαντασία ἐστιν, ἀληθῆς, καὶ τὸ μὴ πάντα φαντασίαν εἴναι αὐληθῆ, κατὰ φαντασίαν ὑφιστάμενον ἐστιν αὐληθές καὶ οὐτο τὸ πάντα φαντασίαν εἴναι αὐληθῆ γενήσεται φεῦδος.

<sup>n</sup> Οἱ λέγοντες πάντα τὰ φαντάσματα ἐστιν αὐληθῆ, ὑπάρχεται ποιεῖ τὰ ὄντα πρὸς τι.

BUT if nothing be *Absolutely true*, but only *Relatively* to him that thinks so, then this very Opinion of *Protagoras*, that nothing was *Absolutely true*, and that *Man was the Measure of all things*, was not it self *Absolutely true*, but only *Seemingly* and *Relatively* to *Protagoras*: Whereas this is asserted for an *Absolute Truth* by him, that nothing is *Absolutely True*.

AND what a Ridiculous Folly was this in one that would be accounted a Philosopher, to take a great deal of Pains in writing a large Volume, and to endeavour industriously to convince the World, *That nothing was Absolutely, but only Relatively and Fantastically true*: Since it must needs follow from thence, that this very thing it self was not *Absolutely true*, but only *Relatively* to those that thought so; and the contrary altogether as true to those that thought otherwise. For it would no more concern the World to know that this was *Relatively and Fantastically true* to *Protagoras* that nothing was *Absolutely true*, than to know what *Protagoras* dreamt of the last Night. For since according to him <sup>°</sup>*that every Man does but think his own Truths*, it cannot concern any Man to know another's

<sup>°</sup> οὐτὶς τὰ αὐτὰ ἔργα μόνα δοξάζει.

68 *Concerning Eternal and*

Opinions any more than his Dreams. And therefore *Protagoras* had done more wisely if he had spared his Pains, and kept those Private Relative Truths of his own, that is, his Dream or Imagination wholly to himself.

BUT by his industrious endeavouring to convince the World of this, *That nothing was Absolutely true, but only Relatively*, he plainly confuted his own Doctrine, in asserting that this was Absolutely True, that nothing was Absolutely true, which is a manifest Contradiction. There need be the less Pains taken in confuting Scepticism and Fantasticism, since it always so easily confutes it self.

3. FOR if nothing be Absolutely true, then not so much as this could be Absolutely true, that it seemed to *Protagoras* that nothing was Absolutely true. And it could only seem to seem to be true. Nay, it could not be Absolutely true, that *Protagoras*, to whom all Truth seemed to be Relative, had any Real Existence, much less that there are any Objects without, from whence the Impressions or Motions are made upon our Senses; or that there is any such thing as *Magnitude, Motion, Figure and Site of Parts*, or <sup>P</sup> *that Matter is*

<sup>P</sup> Την υλην ρευσην θιναι, κη τας λογικας των φαινομενων πάντων ειναι την ιποκειμενην.

*Floating, and that the Reasons of all Appearances are founded therein; which things, as Plato and Sextus tell us, were dogmatically affirmed by Protagoras.*

---

## C H A P. VI.

I. **A**GAIN, as this *Scepticism* or *Fantasticism* of *Protagoras* is most absurd and Contradictitious in it self, so there is not any Foundation for it at all in the Old *Atomical* Philosophy, but contrarywise, nothing doth more effectually and demonstratively overthrow both these Assertions, *That Knowledge is Sense*, and that all *Truth* and *Knowledge* is but *Fantastical* and *Relative*, than this *Atomical* Philosophy doth.

FOR first, since no Sense can judge of it self, or its own Appearances, much less make any Judgment of the Appearances belonging to another Sense for <sup>9</sup> *those things which are perceived by one of our Powers, it is impossible*

<sup>9</sup> "Α δὲ ἐτέρας δινάμεις ἀνθάνη, ἀδύνατος δὲ ἄλλης τύπον ἀνθέας, τοιούς δὲ δι' ἀκοῆς, δι' ὄψεως· οὐ δὲ δι' ὄψεως, δι' ἀκοῆς.

*Concerning Eternal and  
to perceive them by another, as the Objects of  
Hearing by Sight, or the Objects of Sight by  
Hearing, and the like.*

THE Sight cannot judge of Sounds which belong to the Hearing, nor the Hearing of Light and Colours; wherefore that which judges of all the Senses and their several Objects, cannot be it self any Sense, but something of a superior Nature.

2. **MOREOVER**, that which judges that the Appearances of all the Senses have something Fantastical in them, cannot possibly be it self Fantastical, but it must be something which hath a Power of judging what Really and Absolutely is or is not. This being not a Relative, but an Absolute Truth, that Sensible Appearances have something Fantastical in them. Neither could *Protagoras* ever have arrived to the Knowledge of this Truth, if he had not had some Faculty in him superior to Sense, that judgeth of what is and is not Absolutely.

Now this same Rational Faculty, that discovers, according to the *Atomical Philosophy*, that there is something in our Sensations that is merely Fantastical and Relative, doth assure us also not only that there are Absolutely and Really such Passions, Affections and Seemings in

in us, but that they that do *perceive* have an Absolute and Real Entity. For tho' it should be supposed that our Senses did deceive us in all their Representations, and that there were no Sun, no Moon, no Earth, that we had no Hands, no Feet, no Body, as by Sense we seem to have, yet Reason tells us that of Necessity That must be something, to whom these things seem to be, because nothing can seem <sup>to</sup> that that is not; this being an Absolute and Immutable Truth, *That of nothing there is not any either Action or Passion whatsoever*; but also that when we are awake and use our Senses, there are Corporeal Objects really existing without us, which make those Sensible Impressions upon us, and that those Corporeal Objects have absolutely and really as many correspondent Varieties in them in respect of *Magnitude, Figure, Site and Motion*, as there are Varieties of sensible Ideas and Phantasms that we take notice of by them. For *Protagoras* himself, according to the Old *Atomical* Philosophy, acknowledges that *Local Motion, Magnitude, Figure and Site of Parts*, absolutely are in Corporeal things themselves; only that *Colour*

<sup>1</sup> *Sentire.*

<sup>2</sup> *Nihili nullam esse neque Actionem neque Passionem.*

72 *Concerning Eternal and*

and such other things are Relative. Therefore all *Being* and *Truth*, according to *Protagoras* himself, is not Fantastical and Relative, but there is some Absolute.

3. WHEREFORE the proper and genuine Result of this old *Atomical Philosophy*, which is the Triumph of Reason over Sense, is nothing else but this, that Sense alone is not the *Criterion* or Judge of what does Really and Absolutely exist without us, but that there is a Higher and Superior intellectual Faculty in us that judges of our Senses, which discovers what is Fallacious and Fantastical in them, and pronounces what Absolutely is and is not. And *Democritus*, who did more thoroughly and perfectly understand this *Atomical Philosophy* than *Protagoras*, makes this to be the proper Result and Consequence of it, the Invalidating the Judgment of Sense concerning Bodies themselves, and the asserting a higher Faculty of Reason in us to determine what is Absolutely True and False; which is worth the noting. For so *Sextus the Philosopher* writes concerning *Democritus*: <sup>2</sup> Democritus doth

<sup>2</sup> Δημόκριτος δὲ ἀναιρεῖ τὰ φαινόμενα ταῖς ἀιδίοτεσιν, καὶ τύτων λέγει μηδὲν φαινεῖσθαι κατὰ ἀληθεῖαν, ἀλλὰ μόνον κατὰ δόξαν· ἀληθεῖς δὲ εἰ τοῖς ψυστιν ὑπάρχειν τὸ ἀτόμως ἔνεις καὶ κενός.

discredit Sense, attributing not Truth to it, but only Appearance, and that Really nothing exists in the Corporeal World but Atoms and Vacuum. And Democritus's own Words concerning it are these, "Sweet and Bitter, Hot and Cold, Colours, and the like, are by Law and Opinion, Atoms and Vacuum really: That which is supposed and fancied to be are Sensibles; but these are not according to Truth, only Atoms and Vacuum. Sextus Empiricus likewise in another Place writes thus concerning Democritus,<sup>x</sup> Democritus in his Canons saith, that there are two kinds of Knowledge, the one by the Senses, the other by the Mind; of which that by the Mind he calls Knowledge, accounting it that which may be trusted for the Judgment of Truth; that by the Senses, he calleth Dark and Obscure, denying it to have any Certainty as to the Knowledge of Truth. His own Words are these: Of Knowledge there are two

<sup>u</sup> Νέμεται γλυκὺ καὶ νόμῳ πικρὸν, νόμῳ δερμὸν καὶ νόμῳ ψυχρὸν, νόμῳ χροίσαι ἐτεῖχε δὲ ἀπομεινάντι κανόνι.

<sup>x</sup> Εὐ δὲ τοῖς κανόσι δύο φυτοῖς ἔναι τυπάσεις, τὴν μὲν διὰ τῶν ἀιωνίστεων, τὴν δὲ διὰ τῆς διανόσιας, ἀντὶ τὴν μὲν διὰ τῆς διανόσιας γνῶσιν κατάγει προσμαρτυρῶν ἀντὶ τὸ πιστὸν εἰς ἀληθείας κρίσιν, τὴν δὲ διὰ τῶν ἀιωνίστεων σκοτίην ὀνομάζει, ἀφαιρεύμενος ἀντὶ τὸ πρὸς διέγγιασιν τὴν ἀληθῆς ἀπλανέτη λεγει δὲ κατὰ λέξιν. Γνώμων δὲ δύο εἰσὶν. Ιδίαι, οὐ μὲν γνωτίη, οὐ δὲ σκοτίη. Καὶ σκοτίης μὲν τὰ δὲ σύμπαντα "Οψις, Ἀκοή, Όδημη, Τευστις, Ψᾶσσις" οὐδὲ γνωστὴ ἀποκεκενυμένη δὲ τάυτης.

kinds,

*Concerning Eternal and  
kinds, the one Genuine, the other Dark and Ob-  
scure; to the Dark kind of Knowledge are re-  
ferred Seeing, Hearing, Smelling, Tasting,  
Touching; but the Genuine Knowledge is more  
Hidden and Recondite than this.*

Now this concerning *Democritus* I note the rather more carefully, because *Epicurus* afterward dotingly fumbling about the same Philosophy, made *Sense* to be the only *Cri-  
terion* of Truth and Falshood, and conse-  
quently abused this Old Atomical Philosophy to Atheism and Immorality; whereas if rightly understood it is the most Impregnable Bul-  
wark against both; for this Philosophy dis-  
covering that the Ideas of Sense are Fantastical, must needs suppose another Principle in us Superior to Sense, which judges what is Abs-  
olutely and not Fantastically or Relatively only True or False.



## B O O K III.

## C H A P. I.

I.  OW although what I have already said may possibly seem a Sufficient Confutation of *Protagoras's* Objection against the Immutable and Absolute Natures or Essences of all things, from that very *Atomical Physiology*, which he appeals to, which, if rightly understood, is the most compliable with true *Metaphysics*, and the most Subservient to it of any; yet notwithstanding I think it very proper to the Business which I have in hand, to launch out farther into this Argument, to shew the Different Natures of *Sense* and *Intellection* or *Knowledge*, not only that I may thereby the more fully confute this *Scepticism*, or rather *Fantasticism* of *Protagoras*, and

and also assert the Immutable Natures or Essences of things, but also for other Purposes, which I shall give an Account of in the Close of this Discourse, and I hope then to make it appear that this was no Impertinent Digression.

2. I shall begin with *Sense*, to shew what it is, and that it is not *Knowledge*.

*First*, therefore, it is acknowledged by all, *That Sense is Passion*. And there is in all *Sensation*, without Dispute, *First*, a *Passion* in the Body of the *Sentient*, which *Bodily Passion* is nothing else but *Local Motion* impress'd upon the Nerves from the Objects without, and thence propagated and communicated to the *Brain*, where all *Sensation* is made. For there is no other Action of one Body upon another, nor other Change or Mutation of Bodies Conceivable or Intelligible besides *Local Motion*; which Motion in that Body which moves another, is called *Action*, in that which is moved by another, *Passion*. And therefore when a Corporeal Object very remotely distant is perceived by us, since it is by some *Passion* made upon our Body, there must of necessity be a Continued Propagation of some *Local Motion* or Pressure from thence unto the Organs of our *Sense*,

or

or Nerves, and so unto the *Brain*. As when we see many Fixed Stars sparkling in a Clear Night, though they be all of them so many thousand Semidiameters of the *Earth* distant from us, yet it must of necessity be granted, that there are *Local Motions* or Pressures from them, which we call the Light of them, propagated continuedly or uninterruptedly through the Fluid Heavens unto our Optick Nerves, or else we could not see them. And that Motion or Pressure by which we see all other Opake Bodies, is nothing but the <sup>y</sup> *pushing against each other* of the *Aetherial* <sup>z</sup> *Globulous Particles*, striving to move outward from the Center of the *Vortex* resisted or rejected from the Solid Superficies of them ; in the same manner as we feel things at a Distance in the dark, by the Resistency which they make upon the further end of the Staff that we hold in our hands. And when we hear the Sound of a Bell or Cannon a great way off, the Tremulous Vibrations of the Air, like the Circlings of the Water, when a Stone is flung into it, are from thence continually propagated to our Ears or Acoustick

<sup>y</sup> Ἀττέρεισμα.

<sup>z</sup> Globū.

Nerves, the Undulations still growing the wider and weaker, the further they go.

3. But for as much as *Sense* is not meer *Local Motion* impress'd from one Body upon another, or a Body's bare Reaction or Resistance to that Motion of another Body, as some have fondly Conceited, but a Cogitation, Recognition or Vital Perception and Consciousness of these Motions or Passions of the Body, therefore there must of necessity be another kind of Passion also in the Soul or Principle of Life, which is vitally united to the Body, to make up Sensation. Which Passion notwithstanding is of a different kind or *Species* from the former; for the Soul, that is a Cogitative Being, is supposed to be such a thing as can Penetrate a Body, and therefore cannot be conceived to be Locally moved by the Local Motion of the Body. For we see that *Light* which pervades the Air, though it be a Corporeal Motion, yet it is not moved or shaken by the Agitations of the Air, because it is in a Body far more subtle than the Air, that runs through the Spongy Pores of it. Wherefore the *Soul*, though it be conceived to be an *Extended Substance*, yet being Penetrative of Body, not by filling up the Pores of it, but by *coexisting* in the same

- Space

Space with it, cannot be locally moved by the Motions of it.

NEITHER is this Passion of the Soul in Sensation a meer naked Passion or Suffering; because it is a Cogitation or Perception which hath something of Active Vigour in it. For those Ideas of *Heat*, *Light*, and *Colours*, and other Sensible things, being not Qualities really existing in the Bodies without us, as the *Atomical* Philosophy instructs us, and therefore not passively stamped or imprinted upon the Soul from without in the same manner that a Signature is upon a piece of Wax, must needs arise partly from some Inward Vital Energy of the Soul it self, being Phantasms of the Soul, or several Modes of Cogitation or Perception in it. For which Cause some of the *Platonists* would not allow Sensations to be Passions in the Soul, but only <sup>a</sup> *Active Knowledges of the Passions of the Body*.

4. BUT, as I said before, *Sense* is a Passion in the Soul also, *viz.* such a Passion as a Vital and Cogitative Being is capable of, because we find by Experience that it is not elicited from the Soul it self, but obtruded upon it

<sup>a</sup> Παθῶν γνῶσεις.

from without; so that the Soul cannot chuse but have such Sensations, Cogitations or Affections in it, when such or such External Objects are presented to the Outward Senses. The Soul receiving its Information from without, by sympathizing with the Passions of its own Body concerning what Individual Bodies exist round about it, and the general Modes of them; which no innate Reason of its own could possibly discover to it. And therefore the Soul being necessarily determined to exert such Cogitations within it self, when such *Local Motions* are impress'd upon the Body which she is vitally United to, these Sensations are certain kinds of Passive Energies of the Soul. For the *Soul* and *Body* by reason of that vital Union which is betwixt them, making up one <sup>b</sup> *Compound* or *Animal*, do of necessity mutually suffer from Each other, the Body being Variously moved by the Soul, and the Soul again Variously affected from the Body, or the Motions which are made upon it: Neither doth the Soul suffer indifferently from any Body, but all Sense arises from that Natural Sympathy or Compassion which the Soul hath with that Indi-

<sup>b</sup> *Compositum.*

vidual Body with which it is Vitally United. And had not the Soul such a Passive Principle in it, it could not possibly be vitally united to any Body, neither could there be any such thing as an Animal or Living Creature.

MOREOVER, these Sensitive Cogitations, as we shall shew afterward, do plainly differ, in the Mode of them, from those pure Cogitations that are the Actions of the Soul it self; there being a Vast Difference between the Senses of *Hunger* and *Thirst*, and meer Volitions in the Soul to eat and drink, as likewise betwixt that *Grief* and *Sadness* that arises from some ill Tidings told and understood by the Mind, (though there be something of Corporeal Passion consequent or concomitant here also) and betwixt a Sense of Pain when the Body is hurt. And in like manner in those other Sensations of *Light* and *Colours*, *Heat* and *Cold*, the Soul doth not Meerly know or understand the *Figure* and *Motions* of those Corporeal Particles, but hath certain confused Affections and Phantasms within it self by reason of them. From whence it is evident that these Sensitive Cogitations are not Pure Actions springing from the Soul it self, but Compassions with the Body. And there-

fore that Opinion of the *Platonists* is no way to be admitted, that *Sensations are not Passions*, but <sup>c</sup> *Knowledges of the Passions*, as if they were free and sincere Actions of the Soul, or released and Unpassionate Knowledges in it of the Passions of the Body.

5. WHEREFORE *Sensations* formally considered are certain Passions or Affections in the Soul fatally connected with some Local Motions in the Body, whereby the Soul perceiyeth something else besides those Immediate Corporeal Motions in the *Nerves, Spirits or Brain*. For though the Soul do only sympathize with the Motions of its own Body, yet by Sense it doth not take immediate Cognizance of those very Motions themselves, in the *Brain, Spirits and Nerves*, perceiving them as they are in themselves, but it is secretly instructed by Nature to take notice of some other things thereby that may concern the Body.

FOR, first, the Soul is sometimes so affected by reason of those Local Motions of the Blood and Heart communicated by the Nerves unto the Brain, as that it perceives something within it self, viz. certain <sup>d</sup> *Passions* of Joy or Pleasantness, Dulness and Sadness, or Contri-

<sup>c</sup> παθῶν γνῶσις.

<sup>d</sup> Pathemata.

station, Irascible and Concupiscent Inclinations, when we know no Rational Cause for them within our selves, and therefore they could not spring from the Soul it self.

AGAIN, the Soul is sometimes so affected by Motions communicated from the Nerves that belong to the Stomach and <sup>the</sup> *Windpipe*, as that it perceives or takes notice of *Hunger* or *Thirst* in those parts of the Body, and the like may be said of the other Pains or Pleasures, Pruriences and Titillations of the Body, which the Soul perceives as things existing in some certain Parts of the Body it self; when the Nerves are in a certain way moved.

LASTLY, The Soul is frequently so affected by the Motions of those five other Conjugations of Nerves, as that by Natural Instinct it takes notice of some Corporeal things existing without our Bodies, whence that Motion upon the Nerves comes, as *Light*, *Colours*, *Sounds*, *Heat* and *Cold*, *Hardness*, *Softness*, *Gravity*, *Levity*, *Odours*, *Sapours*: The Objects being many times remotely distant from us; though it does not perceive them in the same manner as they absolutely exist without us,

<sup>the</sup> *Oesophagus*.

Now though all these three kinds mentioned be Equally *Passions* and *Sensations* in the Soul, yet the use of Speech hath appropriated the Denomination of Passions only to the former, and stiled the two Latter by the Name of *Sensations*, the First of them being commonly called *Internal Corporeal Senses*, the Second *External*. Wherefore *Corporeal Senses* in general may be thus defined, to be *Affections in the Soul Caused by Certain Local Motions made upon some parts of the Body, by reason of the Vital Sympathy betwixt the Soul and Body, whereby the Soul seems to perceive Corporeal things existing without it self, either in its own Body, or else at a distance from it.*

---

## C H A P. II.

1. **W**HÈREFORE, *Sense* being a *Passion* in the Soul, or a *Compassion* with its *own Body*, which it is vitally united to, that is diversified according to the difference both of Local Motions and of Bodily Organs through which those Motions are conveyed; there

there being a necessary and fatal Connection between certain Motions in some parts of the enlivened Body, and certain Affections or Sympathies in the Soul, which *Democritus* seems to intimate in those Words, <sup>f</sup> *By Law a thing is Cold, or by Law Hot*, that Hot and Cold, and the like, were Passions or Phantasms Fatally Connected with certain Local Motions in the Body. *Sense* is a kind of dull Confused and Stupid Perception obtruded upon the Soul from without, whereby it perceives the Alterations and Motions within its own Body, and takes Cognizance of Individual Bodies existing round about it, but doth not clearly Comprehend what they are, nor penetrate into the Nature of them, it being intended by Nature, <sup>g</sup> as *Plotinus* speaks, not so properly for *Knowledge*, as for the *Use of the Body*. For the Soul suffering under that which it perceives by way of *Passion*, cannot master or conquer it, that is to say, know or understand it. For so *Anaxagoras* in *Aristotle* very fitly expresses the Nature of *Knowledge* and *Intellection* under the Notion

<sup>f</sup> Νόμος Ψυχήσ, νόμος Θερμών.

<sup>g</sup> Πρὸς χρείαν, & πρὸς γνῶσιν.

of <sup>h</sup> Conquering. <sup>i</sup> Wherefore it is necessary, since the Mind understands all things, that it should be free from Mixture and Passion, for this end, as Anaxagoras speaks, that it may be able to master and conquer its Objects, that is to say, to know or understand them. In like manner Plotinus, in his Book of Sense and Memory <sup>k</sup>, makes <sup>l</sup> to suffer and <sup>m</sup> to be conquered all one, as also to <sup>n</sup> know and to conquer; for which Cause he concludes that that which suffers doth not know, <sup>o</sup> That which we make to suffer, <sup>p</sup> in saying so we make it not to know, because to know is to Conquer, and not to be mastered or conquered. Sense, that suffers from External Objects, lies as it were prostrate under them, and is overcome by them: Wherefore no Sense judges either of its own Passion, or of the Passion of any other Sense, but Judgment or Knowledge is the Active Energy of an Unpassionate Power in the Soul.

<sup>h</sup> Κεατῶν.

<sup>i</sup> Arist. De Anima, Lib. 3. Cap. 4. Ἀνάγκη ἄρετος, ἵπει πάντας τοῖς, ἀμειζῆς ἵπας τὸν ἄντη, ὀπτεῖ φησίν. Ἀναξαργόρας, ἔνακτατῆς, τάπτει διεισιγένεσι.

<sup>k</sup> Plot. De Sensu & Memoria. Cap. 2.

<sup>l</sup> Πάσχειν. <sup>m</sup> κρατεῖσθαι. <sup>n</sup> γνῶσκειν & κρατεῖν.

<sup>o</sup> Πάσχειν ἀλλ' οὐ γνῶσκειν τὸ ἐγγὺς ποιεῖν, οὐτε κρατεῖν δύοδας, ἀλλ' οὐ κρατεῖσθαι.

<sup>p</sup> Eo nomine.

2. AND for this Cause Aristotle himself tells us, that the Soul is a Heterogeneous thing, and hath <sup>4</sup> several *Parts* in it of a very different Nature from one another. First, a Higher and *Active* Part, which he calls <sup>5</sup> that which acts separately from the Matter, and is Impassible, and this is <sup>6</sup> *that which knows and understands*; the other a Lower, *Passive* or Sympathetical Part which suffers from without, and acts in Conjunction with the Body, and this is <sup>7</sup> *that to which Sensation belongs*. So that *Knowledge* and *Intellection* are the clear, serene and unpassionate Perceptions of that Higher Part of the Soul which acts alone, by and from it self. *Sensations* are the Energies of that lower, Passive and Sympathetical Part, whereby the Soul is Vitally united to the Body, and cleaving to it, makes up one *Animal* with it. Or else they may be said to be the Cogitations of the whole <sup>8</sup> Compound or *Animal*, which is the Reason that they are so cloudy and confounded, because they arise from the very <sup>9</sup> Mixture and Con-

<sup>4</sup> Μόρια. <sup>5</sup> Τὸ χωρίσαν & απαρτήσας.

<sup>6</sup> τὸ ρεπτικόν. <sup>7</sup> τὸ αἰσθητικόν.

<sup>8</sup> Compositum. <sup>9</sup> Crasis.

fusion of the Soul and Body as it were blend-  
ed together.

3. For though the Soul be a distinct Sub-  
stance, and of a different Nature from the  
Body, yet notwithstanding in every Animal  
it is intimately conjoyned with the Body, and  
Cleaves to it in such a Manner, as that both  
together Compound and make up one thing.  
And therefore it is not present with it only as  
a Mariner with a Ship, that is, meerly Lo-  
cally, or knowingly and unpassionately pre-  
sent, they still continuing two distinct Things;  
but it is vitally united to it, and pas-  
sionately present with it. And therefore when  
the Body is hurt, the Soul doth not unpa-  
ssionately know or understand it, as when a  
Mariner knows that a Ship hath sprung a  
Leak, or when a Man is informed that his  
Neighbour's House is set on fire; but it feels  
a strong and vehement Pain, and hath a dol-  
rous Sense or Perception of it, as being one.  
thing with it. So in like manner when the  
Body wants either Meat or Drink, the Soul  
doth not unpassionately know this as an Indiffe-  
rent By-stander, and therefore rationally only  
will or desire Meat and Drink for it, but it  
feels a passionate Sense of *Hunger* and *Thirst*  
in it self, as being Intimately concerned in

the

the Business. Now the same is true also in those other Sensations, in which the *Animal* seems to be less concerned, as of *Light* and *Colour*, *Heat* and *Cold*, *Sounds* and *Odours*, that they are not simple Knowledges or Intellections of that part of the Soul which acts alone by it self, but they are the Perceptions of that which is vitally united with the Body, and sympathizing with the Motions and Passions of it, makes up <sup>a</sup> one *Compound* with it. Wherefore though all Cogitations be formally in the *Soul*, and not in the *Body*, yet these sensitive Cogitations being in the *Soul* no otherwise than as vitally united to the *Body*, they are not so properly the Cogitations of the *Soul*, as of <sup>b</sup> *the mixed*, or <sup>c</sup> *both together*, as *Plotinus* calls it, the Compound of *Soul* and *Body*, or, as that Philosopher will have it, of the *Body* and a certain *Vivifying Light*, *imparted from the Soul to it*. And therefore, as he observeth out of *Aristotle*, <sup>d</sup> ‘as it is absurd to say the *Soul Weaves*,’ (or indeed the *Body* either, Weaving being a mixt Action of the *Man* and *Weaving Instruments*) so it

<sup>a</sup> *Compositum.*

<sup>b</sup> *Τὸ μικτὸν.*      <sup>c</sup> *συναμφότερον.*

<sup>d</sup> “*Ωςπερ ἄτοπον τὴν ψυχὴν οὐφαίνειν.*

is absurd to say that the Soul alone doth <sup>e</sup> Covet, Grieve or Perceive: these things proceeding from the Compound or the Coalescence of Soul and Body together; being not pure Mental, but Corporal Cogitations of the Soul, as it vitally informs the Body, and is Passionately united to it.

4. Sense therefore is a certain kind of drowsy and Somnolent Perception of that Passive Part of the Soul, which is as it were asleep in the Body, and acts concretely with it. So Plotinus expresses it, <sup>f</sup> *Sense is of that part of the Soul that sleeps, for that of the Soul that is immersed into the Body, is as it were asleep.* It is an Energy arising from the Body, and a certain kind of Drowsy or Sleeping Life of the Soul blended together with it. The Perceptions of which <sup>g</sup> Compound, or of the Soul as it were half asleep and half awake, are confused, indistinct, turbid and encumbered Cogitations, very different from the Energies of the Noetical Part, that acts alone, without Sympathy with the Body, which are free,

<sup>e</sup> Concupiscere, Dolere or Sentire.

<sup>f</sup> [Enn. 3. 1. 6.] Τὸ τῆς ἀνθρώπου ψυχῆς ἐγίνεται ἔστιν ὡς οὐ πεποιητε ψυχῆς, τέτοιο εἴδους.

<sup>g</sup> Compositum or Animæ Semisomnis.

clear, serene, Satisfactory and awakened Cogitations, That is to say, Knowledges.

And that these Cogitations of the Paffive Part of the Soul called *Sensations*, are not Knowledges or *Intellections*, is evident by Experience also, not only in the Senses of *Hunger* and *Thirst*, *Pain* and *Corporeal Titillation*, but also in all those other Perceptions of *Light* and *Colours*, *Heat* and *Cold*, *Sounds*, *Odours* and *Sapours*. For if they were Knowledges or *Intellections*, then all Men would rest Satisfied in the Sensible Ideas or Fantasms of them, and never enquire any further, at least when the Stroke or Impression made upon Sense were strong and vigorous, as when we see the Clear Light of the Meridian Sun, or hear the Loud Noise of Thunder, whereas the one doth but dazzle our Eyes, the other deafens our Ears, but neither enlighten nor inform our Understandings. Whereas, on the Contrary, the Minds of Men are restlessly inquisitive after some further Intellectual Comprehension of all these things that we perceive by our several Senses. Neither is this true of the Vulgar only, but it is very Observable, that the most acute Philosophers in all Ages have complained of their Ignorance of these things; and indeed have confessed themselves more

puzzled and at a loss about these Sensible things, than those abstract Immaterial things which are remote from bodily Sense. <sup>h</sup> *The Essences of Light and Colours* (saith Scaliger) are as dark to the Understanding, as they themselves are open to the Sight. Nay, undoubtedly so long as we consider these things no otherwise than Sense represents them, that is, as really existing in the Objects without us, they are and must needs be Eternally Unintelligible. Now when all Men naturally enquire, what these things are, What is *Light*, and what are *Colours*, the Meaning hereof is nothing else but this, that Men would fain know or comprehend them by something of their *Own* which is Native and Domestick, not foreign to them, some *Active* Exertion or Anticipation of their own Minds, as I shall shew afterwards.

WHEREFORE though Sense be adequate and Sufficient for that end which Nature hath designed it to, *viz.* to give Advertisement of Corporeal things existing without us, and their Motions for the Use and Concernment of the Body, and such general Intimations of

<sup>h</sup> *Luminis & Colorum Essentiæ sunt intellectui tam obscuræ, quam sunt ipsa visui manifesta.*

the Modes of them, as may give the Understanding sufficient Hints by its own Sagacity to find out their Natures, and invent Intelligible *Hypotheses* to solve those Appearances by ; (For otherwise *Reason* alone without Sense could not acquaint us with *Individual Existent things* without us, or assure us of the Existence of any thing besides *God*, who is the only necessarily existent Being;) Yet notwithstanding *Sense*, as *Sense*, is not *Knowledge* or *Intellection* ; which I shall still make further appear by these following more particular Considerations.

---

## C H A P. III.

1. **F**OR, first, *Sense* only Suffering, and receiving from without, and having no *Active Principle* of its own, to take Acquaintance with what it receives, it must needs be a Stranger to that which is altogether adventitious to it, and therefore cannot know or understand it. For to *Know* or *Understand* a thing, is nothing else but by some Inward Anticipation of the Mind, that is Native

tive and Domestick, and so familiar to it, to take Acquaintance with it; of which I shall speak more afterward.

2. *Sense* is but the Offering or Presenting of some Object to the Mind, to give it an Occasion to exercise its own Inward *Activity* upon. Which two things being many times nearly conjoyned together in Time, though they be very different in Nature from one another, yet they are vulgarly mistaken for one and the same thing, as if it were all nothing but meer Sensation or Passion from the Body. Whereas *Sense* it self is but the *Passive Perception* of some Individual Material Forms; but to *Know* or *Understand*, is Actively to Comprehend a thing by some Abstract, Free and Universal <sup>i</sup> *Reasonings*, from whence the Mind <sup>k</sup> as it were looking down (as Boetius expresseth it) upon the Individuals below it, views and understands them. But *Sense* which lies Flat and Grovelling in the Individuals, and is stupidly fixed in the Material Form, is not able to rise up or ascend to an Abstract Universal Notion; For which Cause it never *Affirms* or *Denies*

<sup>i</sup> Ratio's.

<sup>k</sup> Quasi desuper spectans concepta forma quæ subsunt dijudicat.

any thing of its Object, because (as *Aristotle* observes) in all Affirmation, and Negation at least, the Predicate is always Universal. The Eye which is placed in a Level with the Sea, and touches the Surface of it, cannot take any large Prospect upon the Sea, much less see the whole Amplitude of it. But an Eye Elevated to a higher Station, and from thence looking down, may comprehensively view the whole Sea at once, or at least so much of it as is within our Horizon. The Abstract Universal <sup>1</sup> Reasons are that higher Station of the Mind, from whence looking down upon Individual things, it hath a Commanding view of them, and as it were *a Priori* comprehends or Knows them.

But Sense, which either lies in the same Level with that Particular Material Object which it perceives, or rather under it and beneath it, cannot emerge to any Knowledge or Truth concerning it.

3. Sense is but a slight and Superficial Perception of the Outside and Accidentals of a Corporeal Substance, it doth not Penetrate into the Profundity or Inward Essence of it.

<sup>1</sup> Rationes.

For a *Body* may be changed as to all the several Senses, and remain really the same that it was before. Wherefore though Men are commonly said to know things when they see and feel them, yet in truth by their bodily Senses they perceive nothing but their Out-sides and External Indument. Just as when a Man looking down out of a Window into the Streets, is said to see Men walking in the Streets, when indeed he perceives nothing but Hats and Cloaths, under which, for ought he knows, there may be *Dædalean* Statues moving up and down. Neither is this spoken only in respect of that Defect of *Sight* (to omit the other Senses) which is a little relieved by *Microscopical Glasses*, that it cannot perceive the Figures and Contextures of those Minute Particles out of which Bodies are compounded, nor penetrate beyond the Superficies into their Corporeal Profundity; for though our *Sight* were so much more than *Lyncean*, that it could discover the very Pores in Glass through which the *Light* passes, as *Aristotle* complains it cannot; nay, though it could discern the Particular <sup>m</sup> *Globulous Particles*, in the Motion of which *Light* confisteth, and the *Tri-*

<sup>m</sup> *Globuli.*

angular Spaces between them through which the Smallest and most Subtle *Striated Matter* passes; yet notwithstanding it would not reach to the Essential Profundity either of Body, or Sphericalness, or Triangularity, which nothing but the subtle <sup>a</sup> Sharpness of the Mind can penetrate into; so as to comprehend the Immutable <sup>o</sup> Reason of any of them. And therefore it is rightly pronounced by that Excellent Restorer of the Old *Atomical* and *Moschical* Philosophy, <sup>p</sup> That even *Bodies themselves are not properly perceived by the Senses, or by the Imagination, but by the Understanding alone; nor are therefore perceived because they are touched or seen, but only because they are understood.*

4. THE Essence of nothing is reached unto by the Senses looking Outward, but by the Mind's looking inward into it self. That which wholly looks abroad outward upon its Object, is not one with that which it perceives, but is at a distance from it, and there-

<sup>a</sup> Acies. <sup>o</sup> Ratio.

<sup>p</sup> Ipsamet Corpora non propriè à sensibus vel ab imaginandi facultate, sed solo Intellectu percipi, nec ex eo percipi quòd tangantur aut videantur, sed tantum ex eo quòd intelligantur

fore cannot Know and Comprehend it; but Knowledge and Intellection doth not merely <sup>a</sup> look out upon a thing at distance, but makes an Inward Reflection upon the thing it knows, and according to the Etymon of the Word, <sup>b</sup> the Intellect doth <sup>c</sup> read inward Characters written within it self, and Intellectually comprehend its Object within it self, and is the same with it. For though this may be conceived to be true of Individual things Known (although the Mind understands them also under abstract Notions of its own) yet, at least in Aristotle's Sense, it is unquestionably true, <sup>d</sup> In Abstract things themselves, which are the Primary Objects of Science, the Intellect and the thing known are really one and the same. For those Ideas or Objects of Intellection are nothing else but Modifications of the Mind it self. But <sup>e</sup> Sense is of that which is without, Sense wholly gazes and gads abroad, and therefore doth not know and comprehend its Object, because it is different from it. <sup>f</sup> Sense is a Line, the Mind is a Circle. Sense is like

<sup>a</sup> Prospicere. <sup>b</sup> Intellectus.

<sup>c</sup> in Interioribus legere.

<sup>d</sup> Επει τὰν ἄντες ὑπὸ τοῦ ἀντού ἐστι τὸ νοῦς καὶ τὸ γούμενον,

<sup>e</sup> Αισθητοῖς τοῦ ἔξω.

<sup>f</sup> Αισθητοῖς γραμμὴν, νοῦς κύκλος.

a Line which is the Flux of a Point running out from it self, but Intellect like a Circle that keeps within it self.

5. SENSE apprehends Individual Bodies without, by something derived from them, and so *a Posteriori*, <sup>1</sup> *The Senses being last, are the Images of the things.* The Sensible Ideas of things are but Umbratile and Evanid Images of the sensible things, like Shadows projected from them; but Knowledge is a Comprehension of a thing Proleptically, and as it were *a Priori*. But now to lay aside Metaphysicks, and speak plainly, all that which comes from the Individual Object of Sense from without, (as we have already declared) is nothing at all but Local Motion or Pressure, when an enlivened Body is jogged or thrust upon by some other Body without. But to receive or feel a Jogg, Knock or Thrust from without made upon the Body which the Soul is united to, this is not to Know, no not so much as what Local Motion is, much less to know all other things. For Knowledge is not a Knock or Thrust from without, but it consisteth in the A-

<sup>1</sup> Τέρπει τοις αισθήσεσιν τοις.

100 *Concerning Eternal and  
wakening and Exciting of the Inward Active  
Powers of the Mind.*

6. THIS Point which I have hitherto insisted upon concerning the Shallowness, Dulness and Bluntness of Sense, in that it cannot penetrate to the Essences of things, is very ingeniously and Philosophically handled by *Plato*, in his *Theætetus*; where he demonstrates against *Protagoras*, that Science is not Sense, but that there is another Power in the Soul besides that of Sense or Passion, to which Science, Knowledge and Intellection is to be referred after this manner. First, *Socrates* obtains this from *Theætetus*, that Sense is when the Soul, by or through several Organs of the Body, takes Cognizance of several Corporeal things without. And, Secondly, that one Sense or Organical Perception cannot take Cognizance of the Object of another; as Sight cannot see Sounds, nor the Hearing hear Light and Colours: And therefore where we think of the Objects of several Senses comparing them together, and considering of some things common to them all, this cannot be Sense or Organical Perception; because one Sense cannot consider the Object of another Sense. <sup>2</sup> If

<sup>2</sup> Εἰ τοι ἔρεται περὶ ἀμφοτέρων οὐδενός, τὸν δὲ οὐδέγε τοῦτο εἶτε ὄργανον ἀνθένει ἔτι,

any thing concerns both, it cannot perceive it by either Organ. As when we consider Sound and Colour together at once, and attribute several things to them in common; as First of all, Essence; And then that in each of them is Identity with it self, and Diversity to the other, that both of them are two, and each of them one; That they are not like, but unlike to one Another; What Sense or Organ is there by which the Soul perceives all these things, *viz.* Essence and non Essence, Identity, Diversity, Unity, Duality, Similitude, Dissimilitude, things Common both to Sound and Colour? Surely It cannot be neither by the Senses of Sight or of Hearing, because these cannot consider one another's Objects. Neither can we find any other Organ in the Body by which the Soul may passively take Cognizance of all these things, and consider the Objects of both those other Senses of Sight and Hearing. Whereby he makes *Theaetetus* confess, that these things the Soul doth not Organically perceive by any Sense, but by it self alone without any Bodily Organ. And therefore <sup>2</sup> *Some things the Soul perceives*

<sup>2</sup> Ταὶ μὲν αὐτὸν δι αὐτῆς ψυχὴν ἐπισκοπεῖν; τὰ δὲ οὐ τὰν τῆς σώματος δυνάμεαν.

*by it self, or by its own Active Power, as Essence, Similitude, Diffimilitude, Identity, Alterity, Good and Evil, Honest and Dishonest. Other things it perceives by and through the Organs of the Body: As for Example, by the Sense of Touch the Soul perceives nothing but the Hardness of that which is Hard, and the Softness of that which is Soft, and the like. But Essence, and what Hardness and Softness is, and their Contrariety to one another; and again, the Essence of Contrariety it self, the Soul alone by it self discoursing endeavours to judge of. Wherefore there is this difference between those things that come into the Soul by the Passions of the Body, and those things that arise from the Ratiocinative Power of the Soul it self: b That both Men and Beasts do naturally perceive as soon as they be born those things that Come into the Soul by the Passions of the Body. But Ratiocinations concerning these things as to the Natures and Essences of them, and their*

*b Τὰ μὲν ἐνθῦ γενομένοις πάρεστι Φύσις ἀκολάνεις ἀνθράκων τε Εἰρίσις, ὅταν οὐχὶ τῷ σώματος παθήσαται ἐπὶ τὴν ψυχὴν τίνεται τὰ δὲ περὶ τύπων ἀκαλοζίσματα πρός τι θεῖαν Εἰ αὐθίλιαιαν ψόγις Εἰ δὲ χρόνοι οὐκέπει πολλῶν πραγμάτων Εἰ παιδίας παραγίγνεται, οἷς ἀν Εἰ παραγίγνεται.*

Utilities, are slowly by Labour and help of Institution attained unto. Now that which doth not reach to the Essence of any thing, cannot reach to Truth or Knowledge. Wherefore he concludes, <sup>c</sup> That there is no Knowledge or Science in Passions, but in the Discourse of the Mind upon them; for in this latter way it is possible to reach to the Essence and Truth of things, but Impossible in the Former. And that we ought not <sup>d</sup> to seek Knowledge any more in Sense, but in that of the Soul, whatsoever it be called, which doth alone by it self contemplate things that are.

---

C H A P. IV.

i. **B**UT I have still something more to add concerning this Argument before I dismiss it; Wherefore in the next Place I

<sup>c</sup> Εὐ μὲν τοῖς παθήμασι ἐκ οἴστημη, εἰ δὲ τῷ περὶ ἔξι-  
ντος συλλογισμῷ. οὐσίας γρὶ Εἰ ἀληθέας οὐταῦτα μὲν οὐκεὶς δινε-  
τὸν ἀψιστοῖ, ἐκτὸν δὲ ἀδίνατο.

<sup>d</sup> Σητεῖν ἐπισήμων εὐ αἰσθάνον τὸ παρόπαν, ἀλλ' εἰ ἐκεῖνος τῷ οὐ-  
ματι ὅτι ποτὲ ἔχει οὐ ψυχή, ὅταν ἀυτὴν καθ' αὐτὴν πραγματεύηται  
περὶ τὰ οἴτα.

shall make it further appear, that Sense is not Science or Intellec<sup>t</sup>ion, because the Soul by Sense doth not perceive the Things themselves, or the Absolute Natures of them, but only her own Passions from them. This *Sextus the Philosopher* took Notice of, \* *The Senses do not reach to the Objects that are placed without, but to their own Passions alone.* And this is that which *Protagoras* so much insisted on, that <sup>f</sup> *All our Sensible Ideas of Light and Colours, Sounds, Odours, Savors, Heat and Cold, and the like, are not Absolute but Relative Things.* For neither is <sup>g</sup> *Sensation* any thing of the Soul considered Absolutely in it self, it being no Pure and Sincere Cogitation of the Soul alone, neither is <sup>h</sup> *the Sensible Idea* any Absolute Quality of the Object without, but both these (viz. <sup>i</sup> *Sense and Sensible*) are certain middle things begotten betwixt the Agent and the Patient, and resulting from the Activity of the Object without, and the Passion of the Mind within, and severally respecting each of them. Or, as he

\* Pyrr Hyp. 1. 2. c. 7. "Αἱ ἀισθήσεις τὰ ἔκτος ὑποκίνητα καταλαμβάνουσι, μόνα δὲ εἰ ἄρα τὰ εἰαυτῶν πάθη.

<sup>f</sup> Τὰ ἀισθῆτα. <sup>g</sup> "Αισθησις.

<sup>h</sup> Τὸ αισθῆτον. <sup>i</sup> "Αισθησις & αισθῆτος.

expressed it, <sup>κ</sup> From the Congress or Collision of these two together are generated at once both Sense and the Sensible; for the Sensible (formally considered, according to that Idea that we have of it) bath no Existence before Sensation, but is begotten with it. And therefore <sup>1</sup> Colour, and the rest, is neither any thing really existing in the Object without, nor yet any thing in the Soul it self, but a middle thing betwixt both, that is, a Passion. Which is the very same with that which Aristotle imputes to the antient Physiologers as a Paradox, that Black and White were not without the Sight.

THE Truth of which is so evident in some Instances, that none can possibly gainsay it. For when the Body is either Prickt with a Needle or Wounded with a Sword, no Man can imagine that those Pains that result from thence were such Real and Absolute Qualities existing in the Needle or Sword before our Sensation, but that they are our own Passions, and so Relative things to us, or Perceptions

<sup>κ</sup> Ἐκ τῆς τέταρτης ὁμιλίας τε καὶ τρίτης πρὸς ἄλληλα γίγνεται τὸ μὲν ἀισθητὸν, οὐ δὲ ἀισθητικός, ἀεὶ συνεκπίπτεται ἐν γνῶμασιν, μοτὶ τῆς ἀισθητῆς.

<sup>1</sup> Οὐ δῆλον ἔπειται φαμὲν χρῆματα ὕπε τὸ προσβάλλον ὕπε τὸ προσβαλλόμενόν ἔτι, ἀλλὰ μεταξύ τι.

of the Motions of the Needle or Sword Relatively to the enlivened Body, and as they are hurtful to it. And the same is vulgarly acknowledged in those Colours that are therefore called Phantastical, as in the <sup>k</sup> *Rainbow* and the *Prisme*, whereas in Reality all Colours are as Phantastical as the Colours of the Rainbow, and the Colours of the Rainbow as Real as any other. And it is likewise true of the other Proper Objects of the several Senses. For as *Sextus the Philosopher* observes, <sup>1</sup> *Honey is not the same thing with my being sweetened, nor Wormwood the same with my having Sense of Bitterness.* That which we know by Sense concerning Honey and Wormwood, is only that our Taste is so affected from them; but what absolute Mode or Disposition of Parts in them Causes these different Sensations in us, belongs to some other Faculty of the Soul to discover. And hence it comes to pass, that though the Natures or Essences of things be Simple, yet one and the same thing perceived by our several Senses begets several Passions and Phantasms in us. Flame, which is

<sup>k</sup> *Iris.*

<sup>1</sup> Οὐ τὸ αὐτὸ ἔτι τὸ μέλι τῷ γλυκάζεσθαι με, οὐ τὸ ἀψύδιον τῷ πικράζεσθαι.

nothing but a Violent Agitation of the small Particles of a Body by the Rapid Subtle Matter; the same Motion communicated to the Eye or Optick Nerves begets one kind of Sensible Idea or Phantasm called Light, but to the Nerves of Touch another quite Different from it called Heat; therefore neither Light nor Heat, according to those sensible Ideas that we have of them, are really and absolutely in the Flame without, which is but one kind of Motion or Agitation of Matter, but only Phantastically and Relatively, the one to our Sight, the other to our Touch. And hence it proceeds also that Sensations are diversified from the same thing to several Individuals of the same kind, and to the same Individual at several Times, by reason of some difference in the *Idiosyncrasy* or *Proper Temperament* of the Body, as (to omit the Instance of those that are Icteric) appears plainly in the Degrees of Heat and Cold, the Gratefulness or Ungratefulness of several Tastes and Odours to several Individuals, or to the same considered both in Sickness and in Health; which things could not be, if all Sensible Ideas were absolute Qualities in the thing it self, and so taken Notice of by Sense. And it is worth the while to see how *Protagoras*

tagoras philosophized about this latter Instance; improving it to this Purpose. <sup>m</sup> When I drink Wine, being in Health, it appears pleasant and Sweet. For the Agent and the Patient betwixt them beget both Sense and Sweetness, severally respecting the Agent and the Patient. For Sense respecting the Patient, makes and denominates the Tongue Sentient, and Sweetness respecting the Agent (that is, the Wine) makes and denominates that sweet, not Absolutely but respectively to the Tongue of one that is in Health. But when the Patient is altered by Sickness, and becomes different from what it was, then it receives quite another Taste than formerly, for it comes to a very different Patient. Quite different things are produced by the Person and the drinking of the Wine; Respecting the Tongue a Sense of Bitterness, and as to the Wine its being made and denominated bitter.

<sup>m</sup> "Οταν ὁνος πάνα ὑγιαίνειν, ἡδὺς μὸς Ε γλυκὺς. Ἐγένετο γὰρ δὴ τότε ποιοῦν Ε τὸ πάχον γλυκύτητά τε Ε ἀισθησία ἀμα φερόμενα ἀμφότερα. Καὶ οὐ μὲν ἀισθησία πρὸς τοῦ πάχεντος ὅση ἀισθανορέντη την γλῶσσαν ἀπειργάσατο. Ἡ δὲ γλυκύτης πρὸς τοῦ ὁνος περὶ ἀντὸν φερομένη γλυκὺν τὸν ὁνον τῇ ὑγιαίνεσσῃ γλάσσῃ καὶ ὁνος Ε φαινεται. Ὁταν δὲ ἀσθενεῖται ἀλλότι οὐ πρῶτον μὲν τῇ ἀληθείᾳ, οὐ τὸν ἀντὸν ἔλασιν, ἀνομοίῳ γὰρ δὴ προσῆλθε. Ἐτερας δὲ οὖν ἐγενησάτη ὅτε τοιςτος, Ε οὐ τῇ ὁνος πόσις περὶ μὲν τὴν γλῶσσαν ἀισθησίαν πικρότητος, περὶ δὲ τὸν ὁνον γιγνομένην Ε φερομένην πικρότητα.

WHEREFORE since by Sense the Soul doth not perceive Corporeal Objects, as they are truly, Really and Absolutely in themselves, but under some Phantaſtical Representations and Disguises, Sense cannot be Knowledge, which comprehends a thing as it is. And indeed if the Soul had no other Power in it but only this of Paſſion or Sensation, (as *Protagoras* supposed) then there could be no ſuch thing at all as any Absolute Truth or Knowledge. But that Hypothesis of his, as we have already ſhewed, plainly Contradicts and Confutes it ſelf. For that which pronounces that our Sensible Ideas of things are Phantaſtical and Relative, must needs be ſomething in us Superior to Sense, that is, not Relative or Phantaſtical, but that judges what Really and Absolutely *Is* and *Is not*.

2. BUT to ſtrike this Business home, I ſhall in the laſt place further Obſerve, that Sense cannot be Knowledge, nor the Certainty of all things ultimately resolvable into Sense, as many Men beside *Protagoras* conceive, for this Reaſon, because the Nature of Sense conſists in nothing else but meer *Seeming* or *Appearance*. This was intimated before in that Definition that we gave of Sense, that it

is

110 *Concerning Eternal and*

is <sup>in</sup> a Passion or Affection in the Soul, whereby it Seems to perceive some Corporeal things existing. That is, Sense is when the Soul is so affected, as if there were such a Corporeal thing existing. So that all the Reality that is necessarily required to Sense, is only this, that there be Really a Passion in the Soul, or that the Soul be Really so affected, as if there were such a thing ; that is, that it have Really such a Seeming or Appearance, but not that the thing Really be, as it appears. For as to a Thing's being Such or Such, its having such a Mode or Quality, we have already demonstrated by Reason, that in this respect, most of our Sensible Ideas are Phantastical things. And the same may be Evinced and made Evident also by Sense it self ; For it is as true and Real a Sensation, when a Man looking upon a Staff that is partly in the Air, and partly in the Water, sees it Crooked, (though it be Really straight) as when he looks upon it all in the Air, and sees it straight as really it is ; for we are as really Affected, and there is as much a Seeming in one as in the other. And innumerable Instances might be given in this kind, to prove that as to

<sup>•</sup> Εἰ τῷ δοκεῖ, οὐ τῷ φάνεται.

things

things being such or such, there is no other Truth or Reality necessarily required in Sensation, but only that of Appearance.

BUT this is not all, for I shall observe in the next place that there is not so much as the Reality of Being or Existence of the Object necessarily required to Sensation; but there may be a true Sensation, though there be no Object at all Really existing without the Soul. A Known and approved Instance whereof we have in those that, after they had their Arms and Legs cut off, have been sensible, when they were awake, of a Strong and Violent Pain in their Fingers and Toes, though really they had no such Members. And we have all Constant Experience of the same in our Dreams, which are as true Sensations, as those which we have when we are awake, and when the Objects are really existent without us. Because the Soul is as really affected, and hath as lively Images, Ideas and Phantasms of Sensible Things as existent then, as when we are awake, and many times is really Sensible of violent and exquisite Pain, which is a Real Sense, though it be but a Phantaftical Thing; and immediately vanishes away upon our awaking. Because there was nothing really in the Body,

Body, that by the Motions of the Nerves could beget a Real Pain.

3. Now the Reason of this, that the Soul may be passively affected in this manner, when there is no Object at all really existing without it; is from hence: Because by Sense the Soul doth not suffer immediately from the Objects themselves, but only from its own Body, by reason of that Natural and vital Sympathy which it hath with it, neither doth it suffer from its own Body in every part of it, or from the Outward Organs of Sense immediately; as from the Eye when we see, the Tongue when we taste, or the exteriour Parts of the Body when we feel, but only in the Brain, or from the Motions of the Spirits there. But so as that it doth not take immediate Cognizance of those very Motions immediately as they are in themselves, but by the secret Instinct of Nature doth by means of them take Cognizance of those Corporeal Things existing without us, from whence the Original of the Motion comes: As for Example, of the Stars that are so vastly distant, when we look upon the Heavens. Whence it comes to pass, that if that Body from which the Soul immediately suffers, and that is the Spirits in the Brain, be so moved,

as it would be moved by the Nerves when any outward Objects present make their several Impressions upon the Organs of Sense, the Soul must needs have the same Passions, Affections and Sensations in it, as if the Objects were really existing without. Now this may come to pass either by the Fortuitous Motions or Agitations of the Spirits themselves, casually falling into the same Figurations, that the Motions of the Nerves would impress upon them from some outward Objects; or else by the Spirits rushing against certain Prints, Traces or Marks in the Brain, made by former Sensations when we were awake, whereby their Motions are determined. Or, lastly, by the Phantastical Power of the Soul it self, which as it suffers from the Body, so it can likewise act upon it; and according to our Customary Actions, or Inward Affections, Inclinations or Desires, may move the Spirits variously, and beget divers Phantasms in us.

AND that Dreams are many times thus begotten or excited by the Phantastical Power of the Soul it self, is Evident from the Orderly Connexion and Coherence of Imaginations, which many times are continued in a long Chain or Series; with the Fiction of Interlocutory Discourses and Dialogues, consisting

I of

of apt Answers and Replies made interchangeably to one another, and contain such things as never were before printed upon the Brain in such a Series or Order ; which therefore could not proceed either from the fortuitous Dancings or Subsultations of the Spirits, or from the Determination of their Motion, by antecedent Prints or Traces made by former Sensations in the Substance of the Brain.

4. AND the Dreams that we have in our Sleep, are Really the same kind of things with those Imaginations that we have many times when we are awake, when the Fancy, being not commanded or determined by the Will, roves, and wanders, and runs at random ; and spins out a long Thread or Catenated Series of Imaginations or Phantasms of Corporeal Things, quite different from those things which our outward Senses at the same time take notice of. And some Persons there are to whom these Waking Dreams are very Ordinary and Familiar.

AND there is little doubt to be made but if a Man should suddenly fall asleep in the midst of one of these Waking Dreams, when his Fancy is roving and spinning out such a long Series of Imaginations, those very Imaginations

ginations and Phantasms would <sup>1</sup> of course become Dreams, and run on, and appear not as Phantasms or Imaginations only of things feigned or nonexistent, but as Perceptions of things really existent, that is, as Sensations.

WHEREAS these Imaginations that we have of Individual Corporeal things when we are awake, and our Outward Senses employed upon their several Objects, do not seem to be Sensations of things Really existing and Present, as our Dreams do, but to be certain faint, evanid, shadowy and umbratile things, in comparison of those Sensations which we have at the same time with them when we are awake, that is, not as things existent without us, but as our own Cogitations. The Reason whereof is, because though they be both of the same kind, yet those Motions of the Spirits which are caused by the Nerves, from the Objects without when we are awake, being more vigorous, durable, constant and prevalent, do naturally obscure or extinguish those other weaker Phantasms or Imaginations which we have at the same time: And Reason interposing, brings in its Verdict for those Stronger Phantasms also whose Objects

<sup>1</sup> *Ipsa facta.*

are durable and permanent, by means whereof the latter only seem to be Real Sensations, the former counterfeit and Fictitious Imaginations; or meer Picture and Landskip in the Soul. And this Aristotle long ago observed in this manner. *In the day they are shut out and disappear, the Senses and Understanding working, as the lesser Fire is made to disappear by the Greater; and small Griefs and Pleasures by Great ones. But when we are at rest in our Beds, the least Phantasms make Impressions upon us.* In the day-time, and when we are awake, those more fleeting Fancies and Imaginations, which proceed not from the Motions of the Nerves, caused by the Objects without, must needs yield and give place, as being baffled and confuted by those stronger, more durable and lasting Motions that come from the Nerves, caused by permanent Objects, Reason also carrying it clearly for the latter, by means whereof the former cannot appear as Real Things or Sensations. But when we are asleep, the same Phantasms and Imaginations are more strong, vivid and

<sup>1</sup> Μεθ' ὑμέραν ἐκκρέονται, ἐνεργεστῶν τῶν ἀισθήσεων ἐτῆς Διανόμεως, ἐ ἀφανίζονται ὥσπερ παρὰ πολὺ πῦρ ἐλαττεῖ, ἐ λύπαις ἐ γένονται μικραὶ παρὰ μεγάλας, πανταρμένων δὲ ἐπιπολάζεις οὐ τὰ μικρά.

lively;

lively; because the Nerves are relaxated, there are often no Motions transmitted by them from the outward Objects into the Brain, to confound those Motions of the Spirits within, and distract the Soul's Attention to them; Just as the same Loudness of a Voice in a still Evening will be heard a great deal further and clearer, than in the Day-time when the Air is agitated with many contrary Motions crossing and confounding one another. But now there are no other Motions of the Spirits, besides these which cause Dreams to compare with them; and disgrace them, or put them out of Countenance; and as it were, by their louder Noise and Clamours, so to possess the Animadversive part of the Soul, that the weaker Murmurs of the other cannot obtain to be heard, as it is when we are awake, or in the Day-time. And therefore in Sleep the Mind Naturally admits these Phantasms as Sensations, there appearing none other to contradict that Verdict.

5. WHEREFORE, Phantasms and Sensible Ideas are really or Materially the same thing, which Aristotle intimates, affirming that *Fan-*

<sup>1</sup> Φαντασία is μέρος της φαντασίας.

*cy is a weak kind of Sense, and that <sup>1</sup> Phantasms are as Sensations; for both Phantasms and Sensations are Passions or Sufferings in the Soul from the Body. And yet notwithstanding every Phantasm doth not seem to be a Corporeal Thing really existing without the Soul, as a <sup>2</sup> Sensation doth. Wherefore there are two Cases in which a Phantasm doth not seem to be <sup>3</sup> a Sensation. First, when a Phantasm is raised or excited purposely and voluntarily, by the mere <sup>4</sup> Command or Empire of our own Will; as by Experience we find it often is. For it is in our Power to fancy what Corporeal Thing or Person (formerly known to us) we please, though it be absent from us. Nay, and to compound such Things as we never saw before; as a Golden Mountain, a Centaur, a Chimæra. Now in this Case, when the Soul is conscious to it self, that these Phantasms are Arbitrarily raised by it, or by its own Activity, it cannot look upon them as Sensations, or Things really existing without it self, but only as Evanid Images, Pictures and Adumbrations of Things within it self. And such Phantasms as these*

<sup>1</sup> Φαντάσματα αρε ὁιον ἀισθήματα.

<sup>2</sup> Αἰσθημα.      <sup>3</sup> Αἰσθημα.      <sup>4</sup> Imperium.

do usually accompany most of our other Cogitations. Wherefore <sup>2</sup> *Phantasms* do not seem to be <sup>a</sup> *Sensations* or Perceptions of things as really existing without the Soul, when they are Voluntary, or when the Soul is inwardly Conscious that they are raised up by its own Activity.

Secondly, NEITHER doth every Involuntary Phantasm, or such as the Soul is not Conscious to it self to have purposely excited or raised up within it self, seem to be <sup>b</sup> *a Sensation* or Perception of a thing, as existing without us; for there may be Straggling Phantasms, which come into the Mind we know not how; and bubble up of themselves, which yet the Soul may distinguish from <sup>c</sup> *Sensations* or Perceptions of things, as existing really without it; because of some other Phantasms at the same time in the Soul, whose Vigours and Lustre do cloud and eclipse them. For when there are Phantasms of several Kinds at the same time in the Soul, or such as arise from different Motions of the Spirits, the Soul silently comparing both together, naturally looks upon the more vigorous, strong

<sup>a</sup> *Bhantasmata.*      <sup>a</sup> *Αἰσθήματα.*

<sup>b</sup> *Αἰσθήμα.*      <sup>c</sup> *Αἰτθήματα.*

120. *Concerning Eternal and*

and permanent of those Phantasms only as Real Existences; but the more Faint, Flitting and Transitory, as Imaginary things. Now there are two kinds of Involuntary Phantasms, as I have already intimated, in the Soul, when we are awake. One that proceeds from such Motions of the Spirits as are caused by the Nerves moved from the Objects without: Another that proceeds from the Spirits of the Brain, otherwise moved than by the Nerves: And therefore <sup>4</sup> when we are awake, and have Phantasms of both these kinds together in the Soul, those Phantasms that arise from the Motions of the Nerves caused by the Objects without, appearing very different from those other Phantasms that arise from the Spirits otherwise moved than by the Nerves, both in respect of their Vigour and Constancy, do therefore to all such Persons, as are not dis-tempered either in Body or in Mind, naturally seem to be Real, or Things existing without the Soul, but the latter Imaginary. Whereas in Sleep, when the Nerves being relaxated, communicate no Motion to the Spirits, the very same Phantasms (there being now no other and Stronger to compare with them

<sup>4</sup> In vigiliâ.

and

and discredit or disgrace them) do naturally appear to the Soul as Sensations of things Really existing without the Soul.

6. Now the Truth of this Matter doth Evidently appear from hence, in that by reason of some Disease either of Body or Mind, Mens Spirits may be so furiously, violently and strongly agitated, that those Phantoms which do not arise from the Motion of the Nerves, being most prevalent and Predominant, even when they are awake, may become *Sensations* and Appearances of Things as really Existing without the Soul; that Men may confidently believe they hear, see and feel those things that are not, and be imposed upon in all their Senses. Which is a thing that frequently happens, not only in Phrenetical, Maniack and Hypochondriacal Persons, of which there are many Instances recorded, but also in others possessed with strong Passions of Fear, Love, and the like. Wherefore as Sense, that is, the Phantasms that arise from the Motion communicated to the Spirits of the Brain by the Nerves, do ordinarily baffle and confute Imaginations and Fancy; that is, those Phantasms that arise

*as <sup>the</sup> Apparatus.*

from

from the Spirits, otherwise moved than by the Nerves, so likewise Imagination growing wild, rampant and exorbitant, may in the same manner baffle and confute all our Senses.

7. **W H I C H** Exorbitancy of Fancy or Imagination prevailing over Sense, or those Phantasms which arise from the Motion communicated to the Brain from the Objects without by the Nerves, may either proceed originally from some Disease in the Body, whereby the Animal Spirits being furiously heated and agitated, may be carried with so great a Force and Career, as that the Motions caused from the Objects by the Nerves being weakned, may yield and give place to them, and their Phantasms be in a manner silent, vanquished and obliterated by them; those stronger Phantasms that arise from the Agitation of the Spirits themselves, possessing the place of them, the Affection or Animadversion of the Soul being always won by those Phantasms that make the loudest Noise, or have the greatest Vigour. Or else the same thing may proceed Originally from some Disease, or Distemper in the Soul it self. When the Lower, Irrational and Passive Part of the Soul (in which the Concupiscent and Irascible Affections are seated) and so by Consequence,

sequence, the Phantastick Power of the Soul (the same Power that begets in us those waking Dreams before-mentioned) grows excessively and exorbitantly Predominant, insomuch that it doth not only weaken and extinguish the Noetical Powers, which are always proportionably debilitated as this is invigorated, but also prevent the Power of Sense it self, the Immoderate Activity of the Fancy not permitting the Soul to suffer from, or be Passive to, the Action of the Objects upon it, nor quietly to receive the Impressions of them, without ruffling and confounding them. And this is that sad and lamentable Condition that the Soul of Man is liable and obnoxious to, by its overmuch Indulgence to that Passive and Irrational and Corporeal Part in which the Affections, Appetites and Desires are seated; a Condition which, if it continue always, is worse than Death it self, or Perfect Annihilation. To have not only Reason degraded and dethroned, but even Sense it self Perverted or extinguished, and in the room thereof boisterous Phantasms protruded from the Irrational Appetites, Passions and Affections (now grown Monstrous and Enormous) to become the very Sensations of it, by means whereof it is easy to conceive that the Divine

*Vengeance* may make the Soul its own Tormentor, though there were no other Hell without it, not only by representing most loathsome and affrightful, dismal and Tragical Scenes of things to it self, but also by Cruciating it self with exquisite and Sensible Pains. And the serious Consideration hereof should make us very careful how we let the Reins loose to that Passive Irrational Part of our Soul, which knows no Bounds nor Measures, lest thereby we unawares precipitate and plunge our selves headlong into the most sad and deplorable Condition that is imaginable.

8. I SHALL not discourse here, of that Power also which Evil *& Spirits* may possibly have upon those that have either mancipated themselves unto them, or otherwise forfeited that ordinary Protection which Divine Providence commonly affordeth to all, by acting immediately upon the Spirits of the Brain, and thereby endeavour to give an Account of those Phænomena of Wizards and Witches vulgarly talked of, Their Seeming Transportations in the Air, Nocturnal Conventicles and Junkettings,

*Nemesis.*

*Genii.*

and

and other such like things, as seem plainly Contradictious and unreconcilable to Philosophy: But we have already said enough to Prove that Sense is nothing but Seeming and Appearance. And therefore we can have no Certainty by Sense alone either concerning the Absolute Natures of Individual Corporeal things without us, nor indeed of their Existence; but all the Assurance that we have thereof arises from Reason and Intellect judging of the Phantasms or Appearances of Sense, and determining in which of them there is an Absolute Reality, and which of them are but meerly Relative or Phantastical.





## B O O K. IV.

## C H A P. I.

AVING hitherto shewed that Sense or Passion from Corporeal Things existent without the Soul, is not Intellection or Knowledge, so that Bodies themselves are not known or understood by Sense; It must needs follow from hence, that Knowledge is an Inward and Active Energy of the Mind it self, and the displaying of its own Innate Vigour from within, whereby it doth Conquer, Master and Command its Objects, and so begets a Clear, Serene, Victorious, and Satisfactory Sense within it self.

¶ *Kontroll.*

WHERE-

WHEREFORE though it be vulgarly conceived that Knowledge arises from the Force of the Thing Known, acting upon that which knows from without; yet contrarywise it is most certain, to use Boetius's Expression, *That Intellection and Knowledge do not arise from the Force and Activity of the Thing Known from Without, upon that which Knows, but from the Inward Power, Vigour and Activity of the Mind that Knows actively, Comprehending the Object within it self, and Subduing and Prevailing over it.* So that Knowledge is not a Passion from any thing without the Mind, but an Active Exertion of the Inward Strength, Vigour and Power of the Mind, displaying it self from within; and the Intelligible Forms by which Things are Understood or Known, are not Stamps or Impressions passively printed upon the Soul from without, but Ideas vitally pretended or actively exerted from within it self.

2. A THING which is merely Passive from without, and doth only receive Foreign and Adventitious Forms, cannot possibly Know, Understand or Judge of that which it re-

<sup>b</sup> *Id quod scitur, non ex suâ Vi, sed ex Comprehensionis Vi & Facultate sciri vel cognosci.*

ceives, but must needs be a Stranger to it, having nothing within it self to know it by. The Mind cannot know any thing, but by something of its own, that is Native, Domestick and Familiar to it. When in a great Throng or Crowd of People, a Man looking round about, meets with innumerable strange Faces, that he never saw before in all his Life, and at last chances to espy the Face of one Old Friend or Acquaintance, which he had not seen or thought of many Years before; he would be said in this Case to have Known that one, and only that one Face in all that Company, because he had no inward, previous or Anticipated Form of any other Face, that he looked upon, in his Mind; but as soon as ever he beheld that one Face, immediately there revived and started forth a former Anticipated Form or Idea of it treasured up in his Mind, that, as it were taking Acquaintance with that newly received Form, made him Know it or remember it. So when Foreign, Strange and Adventitious Forms are exhibited to the Mind by Sense, the Soul cannot otherwise Know or Understand them, but by something Domestick of its own, some Active Anticipation or Prolepsis within it self, that occasionally reviving

and meeting with it, makes it know it, or take Acquaintance with it. And this is the only true and allowable Sense of that Old Assertion, that Knowledge is Reminiscence, not that it is the Remembrance of something which the Soul had some time before Actually Known in a Pre-existent State; but because it is the Mind's comprehending of things by Some Inward Anticipations of its own, Something Native and Domestick to it, or Something actively exerted from within it self.

AND thus Plotinus argues, when he endeavours to prove that the Immediate Objects of Knowledge and Intellection, are not Things without the Mind acting upon it at a Distance, but contained and comprehended within the Mind it self. <sup>a</sup> *Otherwise how should the Mind know or judge when it had really apprehended any thing, that this is Good, that Honest or Just, these things being all Strangers to the Mind, and Coming into it from without. So that the Mind could not have any Principles of Judgment within it self in this Case, but*

<sup>c</sup> Τὰ νοητά.

<sup>a</sup> Πᾶς δὲ καὶ γνόστας ὅτι ἀντελάβετο ὅντας, πᾶς δὲ ὅτι ἀγνόει τῦτο οὐ ὅτι καλὸν οὐ δίκαιον; "Ἐκαστος γὰρ τύτων ἄλλο ἀντόν, οὐ τοῦ οὐ τοῦ φίλος τῆς κρίσεως ἀρχὴ οὐτε πιστόστη, ἀλλὰ καὶ αὐτὸν ἕξει οὐ οὐλύθειος ἔξει.

*these would be Without it, and then the Truth  
must needs be without it also.*

3. If Intellection and Knowledge were mere Passion from without, or the bare Reception of Extraneous and Adventitious Forms, then no Reason could be given at all why a Mirrour or Looking-glass should not understand; whereas it cannot so much as Sensibly perceive those Images which it receives and reflects to us. And therefore Sense of it self, as was before intimated, is not a mere Passion, but a Passive Perception of the Soul, which hath something of Vital Energy in it, because it is a Cogitation; to which Vital Energy of the Soul those Sensible Ideas of Light, Colours, Heat, and the like, owe all their Entity. Much less therefore can Intellection be a Pure Passion. But if Intellection and Knowledge were a Mere Passive Perception of the Soul from without, and nothing but Sense, or the Result of it, then What Reason could be given, why Brute Animals, that have all the same Senses that Men have, and some of them more acute, should not have Intellection also, and be as capable of Logick, Mathematicks and Metaphysicks, and have the same Notions of Morality, of a Deity and Religion that Men have? Where-

fore it must of necessity be granted, that besides Passion from Corporeal things, or the Passive Perception of Sense, there is in the Souls of Men another more Active Principle or <sup>•</sup> an *Innate Cognoscitive Power*, whereby they are enabled to Understand or Judge of what is Received from without by Sense. And some, that would otherwise make the Soul as naked a thing as is possible, are forced to acknowledge thus much. And hereby they Grant all that we Contend for and they deny, Though confidering not in the mean time what they say. For this Innate Cognoscitive Power in the Soul, can be nothing else but a Power of Raifing Intelligible Ideas and Conceptions of things from within it self. For it is not possible that any Knowledge should be without an Objective Idea or Conception of something known included in it, or that <sup>•</sup> the *Intellection* should be in one Faculty, and <sup>•</sup> the *Conception* in another, one in the Intellect, and the other in the Fancy. That Knowledge should be Actively produced from within, and the Conception or Objective Idea passively received from without, That,

<sup>•</sup> Vis cognoscendarum rerum innata.

<sup>•</sup> Non est.      <sup>•</sup> Non posse.

the Mind should exert an Act of Knowledge or Intellection without an Object, or upon an Object without it self, and not comprehended by it, That the Idea of the Thing Known should not be comprehended in the Knowledge of it. Whereas, as Aristotle himself hath observed, <sup>b</sup> *Actual Knowledge is in Reality the same with the Thing Known, or the Idea of it*, and therefore inseparable from it. It being nothing but the Mind's being conscious of some Intelligible Idea within it self.

4. AND therefore, whereas the Only Objects of Sense are Individual Corporeal things existing without the Mind, which the Soul perceives by looking out from it self upon that from which it suffers, not actively comprehended within it self; The Primary and Immediate Objects of Intellection and Knowledge, are not Things existing without the Mind, but the Ideas of the Mind it self actively exerted, that is, the Intelligible <sup>i</sup> *Reasons of things*. <sup>k</sup> *The Intellection is not of what is without, as Sense is.* And <sup>l</sup> *The Im-*

<sup>b</sup> Τὸ ἀυτὸ ἵππο οὐ κατ' ἐπρεσσαν ἐπισήμων τῷ πράγματι.

<sup>i</sup> Rationes.

<sup>k</sup> Νέοντις δὲ τὸ ἵππο ὀσπερ οὐ μετέπειται.

<sup>l</sup> Ότι δὲ τὸ ἵππο τὸ νῦ τὰ γοντα.

mediate Objects of Intellection are not without the Mind that Understands. They are Affer-tions that Plotinus at large demonstrates. And Aristotle frequently asserts the same, <sup>m</sup> *In Abstracted things that which understands and that which is understood are the same; for the Theoretical Science and the <sup>n</sup> Knowable or Object of Knowledge are all one.* And <sup>o</sup> *the Mind altogether is that which understands Things:* These being all but several Modifications of Intellect. For as hard and Soft, Hot and Cold, and the like Corporeal Qualities, are but Several Modifications of Matter, so the Several Objective Ideas of the Mind in Scientifical Speculation, are but Several Modifications of the Mind knowing. Where-fore Individual things existing without the Soul, are but the Secondary Objects of Knowledge and Intellection, which the Mind un-derstands not by looking out from it self as Sense doth, but by reflecting inwardly upon it self, and comprehending them under those In-telligible Ideas or <sup>p</sup> *Reasonings* of its own, which

<sup>m</sup> Ἐπὶ τῶν ἄστεν ὑλικῶν τὸ ἀντό ἐστι τὸ νοοῦν ἐπὶ τὸ νοούμενον. οὐ γάρ ἐπισήμων ἡ θεωρητικὴ ἐπὶ τὸ ἐπισητὸν τὸ ἀντό ἐστι.

<sup>n</sup> Scibile.

<sup>o</sup> Ολως ὁ νοῦς ὁ κατ' ἐπεργεσίαν τὰ πράγματα νοεῖ.

<sup>p</sup> Rationes.

it protrudes from within it self ; so that the Mind or Intellect may well be called (though in another Sense than *Protagoras* meant it) <sup>4</sup>*The Measure of all things.*

5. For the Soul having an Innate Cognoscitive Power Universally, (which is nothing else but a Power of raising Objective Ideas within it self, and Intelligible <sup>1</sup>*Reasons* of any thing) it must needs be granted that it hath a Potential Omnipresence in it. Which is not only asserted by the Platonists, that the Soul is <sup>2</sup>*all things Intellectually*, but also by *Aristotle* himself <sup>3</sup>*That the Soul is in a manner All Things.* The Mind being a kind of Notional or Representative World, as it were a Diaphanous and Crystalline Sphære, In which the Ideas and Images of all things existing in the Real Universe may be reflected or represented. For as the Mind of God, which is the Archetypal Intellect, is that whereby he always actually comprehends himself, and his own Fecundity, or the Extent of his own Infinite Goodness and Power ; that is, the Possibility of all things ; So all Created Intellects

<sup>4</sup> Τὸ Μέτρον πάντων.

<sup>1</sup> Rationes.

<sup>3</sup> Πάντα νοερῶς.

<sup>2</sup> Τὴν ψυχὴν ἔνας τὰ ὅντα πᾶς πάντων.

being certain Ectypal Models, or Derivative Compendiums of the same; although they have not the Actual Ideas of all things, much less are the Images or Sculptures of all the Several Species of existent Things fixed and engraven in a dead manner upon them; yet they have them all Virtually and Potentially comprehended in that one <sup>“</sup> *Cognoscitive Power* of the Soul, which is a Potential Omnipresence, whereby it is enabled as Occasion serves and Outward Objects invite, gradually and successively to unfold and display it self in a Vital manner, by framing Intelligible Ideas or Conceptions within it self of whatsoever hath any Entity or Cogitability. As the Spermatick or Plastick Power doth Virtually contain within it self, the Forms of all the Several Organical Parts of Animals, and displays them gradually and Successively, framing an Eye here and an Ear there.

6. Now because Intellection and Knowledge are not Passion from without, but an Active Exertion of the Mind from within it self, hence it comes to pass, as Aristotle hath observed, that the Mind by knowing that which is <sup>\*</sup> exceedingly Intelligible, the most

<sup>”</sup> *Vis cognitrix.*      <sup>”</sup> *Σφόδρα νοητός.*

Radiant and Illustrious Truths, is not debilitated thereby or overpowered, as Sense is in perceiving that which is <sup>y</sup> exceedingly Sensible, as the Brightness of the Sun ; but contrarywise the more invigorated thereby, and the better enabled to comprehend lesser and Smaller Truths ; because though Sense is Passive and Organical, yet Knowledge is Inorganical and an Active Power and Strength of the Mind, which the more it is exerted, is the more thereby invigorated and enlarged.

FROM hence likewise it is, as the same Aristotle hath observed, <sup>z</sup> *That those Knowledges which are more abstract and remote from Matter, are more accurate, intelligible and demonstrable, than those which are Conversant about Concrete and Material things, as Arithmetick than Harmonicks, which are Numbers Concrete with Sounds ; and so likewise Geometry than Astronomy, or the Mixed Mathematicks ; whereas if all Knowledge did arise from Corporeal things by way of Sense and Passion, it must needs be contrarywise true, that the more Concrete and Sen-*

<sup>y</sup> Σφόδρα ἀποδητόν.

<sup>z</sup> Ἀριθμετίραν ἐπισήμων τῆς ἐπισήμης, τὸν μὴ καθ' ὑποκείμενον τῆς καθ' ὑποκείμενης, οἰον ἀριθμητικὴν τῆς ἀριθμητικῆς.

fible things were, the more Knowable they would be. Moreover, from hence it is also, as Experience tells us, that Scientifical Knowledge is best acquired by the Soul's Abstraction from the Outward Objects of Sense, and Retiring into it self, that so it may the better attend to its own Inward Notions and Ideas. And therefore it is many times observed, that Over-much Reading and Hearing of other Men's Discourses, though learned and elaborate, doth not only distract the Mind, but also debilitates the Intellectual Powers, and makes the Mind Passive and Sluggish, by calling it too much outwards. For which Cause that wise Philosopher *Socrates* altogether shunned that Dictating and Dogmatical Way of Teaching used by the Sophisters of that Age, and chose rather an Aporetical and Obstetricious Method; because Knowledge was not to be poured into the Soul like Liquor, but rather to be invited and gently drawn forth from it; nor the Mind so much to be filled therewith from without, like a Vessel, as to be kindled and awakened. *Lastly*, from hence is that strange Parturiency that is often observed in the Mind, when it is sollicitously set upon the Investigation of some Truth, whereby it doth endeavour, by ruminating and

and revolving within it self as it were to conceive it within it self, <sup>a</sup> to bring it forth out of its own Womb; by which it is evident, that the Mind is Naturally Conscious of its own Active Fecundity, and also that it hath a Criterion within it self, which will enable it to know when it hath found that which it sought.

7. WHEREFORE it is evident from what we have declared, that there are two kinds of Perceptive Cogitations in the Soul: The one Passive, when the Soul perceives by suffering from its Body, and the Objects without; the other Active, when it perceives by exerting its own Native Vigour from within it self. The Passive Perceptions of the Soul have two several Names given unto them; for when the Soul, by sympathizing with the Body, seems to perceive Corporeal things, as present and really existing without it, then they are called <sup>b</sup> *Sensations*. But when the Passive Affections of the Soul are looked upon not as Things really existing without the Mind, but only as Pictures of Sensible things in the Mind, or more Crass or Corporeal Cogitations, then they are called <sup>c</sup> *Phantasms* or

<sup>a</sup> *Parturire.*

<sup>b</sup> *Αισθήματα.*

<sup>c</sup> *Φαντάσματα.*

Imaginations. But these <sup>d</sup> *Phantasms* and *Sensations* being really the same things, as we said before, both of them being Passions or Affections in the Soul, caused by some local Motions in the Body, and the Difference between them being only Accidental, insomuch that <sup>e</sup> *Phantasms* may be changed into <sup>f</sup> *Sensations*, and sometimes also <sup>g</sup> *Sensations* into <sup>h</sup> *Phantasms*, therefore all these Passive Perceptions of the Soul may be called in general <sup>i</sup> *Phantasms*. But the Active Perceptions which rise from the Mind it self without the Body, are commonly called <sup>k</sup> *Conceptions of the Mind*; and so we have the two Species of Perceptive Cogitations; the one <sup>l</sup> *Phantasms*, and the other <sup>m</sup> *Conceptions of the Mind*.

8. Now that all our Perceptive Cogitations are not <sup>n</sup> *Phantasms*, as many contend, but that there is another Species of Perceptive Cogitations distinct from them, arising from the Active Vigour of the Mind it self, which we therefore call <sup>o</sup> *Conceptions of the Mind*,

<sup>d</sup> Φαντάσματα & Ἀισθήματα.

<sup>e</sup> Φαντάσματα. <sup>f</sup> Ἀισθήματα.

<sup>g</sup> Ἀισθήματα. <sup>h</sup> Φαντάσματα.

<sup>i</sup> Φαντάσματα. <sup>k</sup> Νόηματα.

<sup>l</sup> Φαντάσματα. <sup>m</sup> Νόηματα.

<sup>n</sup> Φαντάσματα. <sup>o</sup> Νόηματα.

is demonstrably evident from hence ; because Phantasms are nothing else but Sensible Ideas, Images or Pictures of Outward Objects, such as are caused in the Soul by Sense ; whence it follows, that nothing is <sup>¶</sup> the Object of Fancy, but what is also <sup>¶</sup> the Object of Sense, nothing can be fancied by the Soul, but what is Perceptible by Sense. But there are many Objects of our Mind, which we can neither See, Hear, Feel, Smell nor Taste, and which did never enter into it by any Sense ; and therefore we can have no Sensible Pictures or Ideas of them, drawn by the Pencil of that Inward Limner or Painter which borrows all his Colours from Sense, which we call Fancy ; and if we reflect on our own Cogitations of these things, we shall sensibly perceive that they are not Phantastical, but Noematical. As for Example, Justice, Equity, Duty and Obligation, Cogitation, Opinion, Intellection, Volition, Memory, Verity, Falsity, Cause, Effect, Genus, Species, Nullity, Contingency, Possibility, Impossibility, and innumerable more such there are that will occur to any one that shall turn over the Vocabularies of any Language, none of which can

<sup>¶</sup> φαντασία. <sup>¶</sup> άντεργνών.

have any sensible Picture drawn by the Pencil of the Fancy. And there are many whole Propositions likewise, in which there is not any one Word or Notion that we can have any genuine Phantasm of, much less can Fancy reach to an Apprehension of the Necessity of the Connexion of the Terms. As for Example, <sup>1</sup> *Nothing can be and not be at the same time.* What proper and genuine Phantasms can any perceive in his Mind either of <sup>2</sup> *Nothing*, or <sup>3</sup> *Can*, or <sup>4</sup> *be*, or <sup>5</sup> *And*, or <sup>6</sup> *Not be*, or <sup>7</sup> *at the same*, or <sup>8</sup> *Time.*

9. NEITHER was it Asserted by Aristotle, as some have taken for granted, That all our Perceptive Cogitations are Phantasms, but contrarywise, that there are <sup>b</sup> *Conceptions of the Mind* which are distinct things from <sup>c</sup> *Phantasms*, only that the latter were always Individual Companions of the former. This appears from those Words of his, <sup>d</sup> *The Conceptions of the Mind somewhat differ from Phantasms, they are not Phantasms, but nei-*

<sup>a</sup> *Nihil potest esse & non esse eodem tempore.*

<sup>b</sup> *Nihil,      <sup>1</sup> potest,      <sup>4</sup> esse,*

<sup>2</sup> *Et      <sup>3</sup> non esse,      <sup>5</sup> eodem,      <sup>6</sup> tempore.*

<sup>c</sup> *Νόηματα.      <sup>4</sup> Φαντάσματα.*

<sup>d</sup> *De anima. I. 3. c. Νόηματα τινὶ δύος τοῦ μὴ Φαντάσματα ἔιναι, οὐδὲ ταῦτα Φαντάσματα, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἄλιν Φαντάσματα.*

142 *Concerning Eternal and  
other are they without Phantasms.* Where he  
inclines to this, that the <sup>c</sup> *Conceptions of the  
Mind* are not <sup>f</sup> *Phantasms*, but that they have  
Phantasms always joined with them; So again  
afterward He asks, <sup>g</sup> *Whether Intellection be  
Fancy, or rather a different Thing from Fancy,  
but such as never goes without it.* Which in-  
deed he affirms in other Places, that the Mind  
doth never <sup>h</sup> *conceive* without a Phantasm.  
Now this is true of Sensible and Corporeal  
things, that we never Understand them, but  
we have also some confused Phantasms or  
other of them in our Mind, and yet besides  
the <sup>i</sup> *Phantasms*, the Mind exerts <sup>k</sup> *Concep-  
tions* also upon them, or else it could not un-  
derstand them, Phantasms being but imper-  
fect, incomplete, and Superficial Cogitations,  
which sometimes go before, and Invite or  
call in the mean while the Perceptions of the  
Mind, and sometimes follow and attend upon  
the <sup>l</sup> *Conceptions of the Mind*, as the Shadow  
upon the Substance, but never comprehend  
the Thing. And indeed as we our selves con-

<sup>c</sup> Νοήματα. <sup>f</sup> Φαντάσματα.

<sup>g</sup> Ἐι τὸ νοεῖν Φαντασία, οὐ μη ἔχειν Φαντασίας.

<sup>h</sup> Νοεῖν. <sup>i</sup> Φαντάσματα.

<sup>k</sup> Νοήματα. <sup>l</sup> Νοήματα.

list of Soul and Body Naturally united together, so are the Cogitations that we have of Corporeal things usually both Noematical and Phantasmatical together, the one being as it were the Soul, and the other the Body of them. For when a Geometrician considers a Triangle, being about to demonstrate that it hath three Angles Equal to two Right Angles, no doubt but he will have the Phantasmatical Picture of some Triangle in his Mind; and yet notwithstanding he hath also a Noematical Perception or Intellectual Idea of it too, as appears from hence, because every express Picture of a Triangle must of necessity be either Obtuseangular or Rectangular, or Acutangular, but that which in his Mind is the Subject of this Proposition thought on, is the <sup>m</sup> *Reason* of a Triangle Undetermined to any of these Species. And the like might be observed also of the Word Angles in the same Proposition. In like manner, whenever we think of a Phantasmatical, Universal, or Universalized Phantasm, or a thing which we have no clear Intellecation of; as for Example, of the Nature of a Rose in general, there is a Complication of something Noe-

<sup>m</sup> Ratio.

matical, and something Phantasmatical together; for <sup>η</sup> *Phantasms* in themselves alone, as well as <sup>ο</sup> *Sensations*, are always Individual things. And by a Rose considered thus Universally and Phantasmatically, we mean a Thing which so affects our Sense in respect of Figure and Colour.

10. BUT as for those other Objects of Cogitation, which we affirmed before to be in themselves neither <sup>η</sup> the Objects of Sense, nor <sup>η</sup> the Objects of Fancy, but only <sup>τ</sup> things understood, and therefore can have no Natural and Genuine Phantasms properly belonging to them; yet it is true, notwithstanding that the Phantastick Power of the Soul, which would never willingly be altogether idle or quite excluded, will busily intend it self here also. And therefore many times, when the Intellect or Mind above is Exercised in Abstracted Intellec[t]tions and Contemplations, the Fancy will at the same time busily employ it self below, in making some kind of Apish Imitations, counterfeit Iconisms, Symbolical Adumbrations and Resemblances of those Intellectual Cogitations of Sensible and Corporeal

<sup>η</sup> Φαντάσματα.

<sup>ο</sup> Αισθήματα.

<sup>η</sup> Αισθητά.

<sup>η</sup> Φαντασία.

<sup>τ</sup> Νοητά.

things.

things. And hence it comes to pass, that in Speech, Metaphors and Allegories do so exceedingly please, because they highly gratify this Phantastical Power of Passive and Corporeal Cogitation in the Soul, and seem thereby also something to raise and refresh the Mind it self, otherwise lazy and ready to faint and be tired by over-long abstracted Cogitations, by taking its old Companion the Body to go along with it, as it were to rest upon, and by affording to it certain crassé, palpable, and Corporeal Images, to incorporate those abstracted Cogitations in, that it may be able thereby to see those still more silent and subtle Notions of its own, sensibly reflected to it self from the Corporeal Glass of the Fancy.

SOMETIMES also there are other spurious Phantasms that do little or nothing symbolize with the Noetical Cogitations, that yet are arbitrarily or customarily annexed to them, merely because the Phantastick Power would not stand wholly idle and unemployed; so that when the Mind thinks of such an Intelligible Idea, the Fancy will presently hold forth such a customary Phantasm before it, <sup>as</sup>

• "Ωσπερ οἱ σὺ τοῖς μυημονικοῖς τιθέμενοι καὶ οἰδωλοποιοῦντες.

146 *Concerning Eternal and  
those that use Artificial Memory, make certain  
Phantasms at pleasure to signify certain Cogi-  
tations.*

BUT lastly, rather than the Fancy shall quite stand out and do just nothing at all, it will sometimes exercise it self (especially in Speech) in raising Phantasms of the very Sounds and Names, by which the Notions of the Mind are signified respectively. So that it is very true both that there are active <sup>1</sup> *Cogitations of the Mind* distinct from <sup>2</sup> *Phantasms*; and such of which there can be no Natural and Genuine Phantasms or Sensible Pictures; and yet according to Aristotle's Opinion, that frequently those <sup>3</sup> *Conceptions of the Mind* (at least in the Vulgar, that are little accustomed to abstracted Cogitation) have some kind of Spurious and counterfeit, or Verbal and Nominal Phantasms joined with and accompanying of them.

11. As for that Opinion, that the <sup>4</sup> *Concep-  
tions of the Mind* and intelligible Ideas or <sup>5</sup> *Rea-  
sons* of the Mind should be raised out of the

<sup>1</sup> Νόμιμα.

<sup>2</sup> Φαντάσματα.

<sup>3</sup> Νόμιμα.

<sup>4</sup> Νόμιμα.

<sup>5</sup> Rationes.

• *Phantasms* by the strange Chymistry of  
 • *an Agent Intelligence*; This as it is founded  
 on a Mistake of Aristotle's Meaning, who  
 never dreamed of any such a Chimerical  
 • *Agent Intelligence*, as appears from the  
 Greek Interpreters that best understood him;  
 so it is very like to that other Opinion called  
*Peripatetical*, that asserts the Eduction of  
 Immaterial Forms out of the Power of Mat-  
 ter; and as both of them arise from the same  
 Sottishness of Mind that would make Stupid  
 and Senseless Matter the Original Source of  
 all things; so there is the same Impossibility  
 in both, that Perfection should be raised out  
 of Imperfection, and that Vigour, Activity  
 and awakened Energy, should ascend and  
 emerge out of dull, sluggish, and drowsy  
 Passion. But indeed this Opinion attributes  
 as much Activity to the Mind, if at least  
 the Agent Intelligence be a Part of it, as ours  
 doth; as he would attribute as much Activity  
 to the Sun, that should say the Sun had a  
 Power of educating Light out of Night or the  
 dark Air, as he that should say the Sun had a  
 Power of exerting Light out of his own Body.

<sup>a</sup> Φαντίσματα.

<sup>b</sup> Intellectus agens.

<sup>c</sup> Intellectus agens.

The former being but an improper Way of expressing the same thing, which is properly signified in the latter way,

But that other Opinion, that asserts that the Abstract and Universal <sup>d</sup> *Reasons* of things, as distinct from Phantasms, are nothing else but mere Names without any Signification, is so ridiculously false, that it deserves no Confutation at all.

---

## CHAP. II.

I. THAT there are some Ideas of the Mind which were not stamped or imprinted upon it from the Sensible Objects without, and therefore must needs arise from the Innate Vigour and Activity of the Mind it self, is evident, in that there are, *First*, Ideas of such things as neither are Affections of Bodies, nor could be imprinted or conveyed by any Local Motions, nor can be pictured at all by the Fancy in any sensible Colours; such as are the Ideas of Wisdom,

<sup>d</sup> *Rationes.*

Folly, Prudence, Imprudence, Knowledge, Ignorance, Verity, Falsity, Virtue, Vice, Honesty, Dishonesty, Justice, Injustice, Volition, Cogitation, nay, of Sense it self, which is a Species of Cogitation, and which is not perceptible by any Sense; and many other such like Notions as include something of Cogitation in them, or refer to Cogitative Beings only; which Ideas must needs spring from the Active Power and Innate Fecundity of the Mind it self, Because the Corporeal Objects of Sense can imprint no such things upon it. *Secondly*, in that there are many Relative Notions and Ideas, attributed as well to Corporeal as Incorporeal things that proceed wholly from the Activity of the Mind Comparing one thing with another. Such as are Cause, Effect, Means, End, Order, Proportion, Similitude, Dissimilitude, Equality, Inequality, Aptitude, Inaptitude, Symmetry, Asymmetry, Whole and Part, Genus and Species, and the like.

2. *BUT* that which imposes upon Mens Judgements here, so as to make them think, that these are all Passive Impressions made upon the Soul by the Objects of Sense, is nothing else but this; because the Notions both of those Relative Ideas, and also of those

other Immortal things, (as Vertue, Wisdom, the Soul, God) are most Commonly Excited and awakened occasionally from the Appulse of Outward Objects knocking at the Doors of our Senses. And these Men not distinguishing betwixt the Outward Occasion or Invitation of those Cogitations, and the immediate Active or Productive Cause of them, impute them therefore all alike, as well these intelligible, as the other Sensible Ideas, or Phantasms, to the Efficiency or Activity of the outward Objects upon us. Wherefore that we may the better understand how far the Passion of Sense reaches, and where the Activity of the Mind begins, we will compare these three Things together: *First*, a Mirror, Looking-glass or Crystal Globe; *Secondly*, a Living Eye, that is, a Seeing or Perceptive Mirror or Looking-glass; *Thirdly*, a Mind or Intellect Superadded to this Living Eye or Seeing Mirror.

3. **FIRST** therefore, when the same Objects are equally Exposed or held before a Crystal Globe or Looking-glass, and a Living Eye; there are all the same Impressions made upon the Crystal Globe, that there are upon the Living Eye; which appears from

hence, because the Eye looking upon the Crystal Globe or Mirror, will see all the same Images reflected to it self from thence, that it perceived before immediately from the Objects themselves. The Motion and Pressure of the Etherial <sup>a</sup> *Globulous Particles*, in which the Nature of Light is conceived to Consist, from every Opake Object, bearing alike every way upon that which resists, and therefore as much upon the Mirror as the Eye: So that there is every jot as much Corporeal Passion in the Mirror or Crystal Globe, as in the Glassy part of the Living Eye; for, as we said before, the Corporeal Part of the Eye is indeed nothing else but a Mirror or Looking-glass. And yet notwithstanding, the Mirror or Chrystal Globe doth not see or Perceive any thing as the Eye doth; From whence we learn, *First*, that Things are never perceived meerly by their own Force and Activity upon the Percipient, but by the Innate Force, Power and Ability of that which perceives. And therefore, *Secondly*, that Sense it self is not a meer Corporeal Passion; but a Perception of the Bodily Passions proceeding from some Power and Ability supposed to reside in

<sup>a</sup> Globuli.

a Sensitive Soul, Vitally united to that respective Body. Which Perception, though it have something of Energy in it, as being a Cogitation; yet it is rightly called a Passion of the Soul, because it is not a clear Intellectual or Cognoscitive Perception of the Motions of the Body, but a Passive or Sympathetical Perception only. Whereby, according to Nature's Instinct, it hath several Seemings or Appearances begotten in it of those resisting Objects without it at a Distance, in respect of Colour, Magnitude, Figure and Local Motion; by reason of the Difference of those Rectilinear Motions communicated from them by the Intermediate *Globulous Particles*, and impressed upon the Optick Nerves.

WHEREFORE the Living Eye immediately perceives nothing but these Corporeal Passions which are made equally upon it, and the Mirror or Crystal Globe alike, by the Motion of that Intermediate or subtle Body which causeth Light; which Corporeal Passions being also Passively perceived by that Vital Principle called the Sensitive Power residing in the Eye, all Passion from the Outward Object there ceaseth, and goes no fur-

*Globuli*

*ther* :

ther: But that Power of the Soul that next followeth, which is the third thing that we mentioned before, the Intellect, begins immediately to exert and display its Activity upon the Object passively perceived by Sense.

4. But the better to illustrate the Busineſs in hand, let us again suppose some Ingenious Piece of Mechanism, or Artificial *Automaton*; as for Example, an Horologe or Watch, at once held before the Mirror or Crystal Globe, and also exposed to the Particular View of the Living or Sentient Eye, both in the Outſide and Interiour Fabrick of it; so that as every Part in it is reflected from the Mirror, so it may be Conſciously perceived also by the Sentient Eye, in a Particular Successive View. Now the Sentient Eye will be conſcious or Perceptive of nothing in all this, but only its being Variouſly affected, from different Co-lours, Figures, Protuberancies, Cavities, Sculptures, Local Motions, one after another, all the same things which were impressed on the Crystal Globe or Mirror, and reflected from it, there being no Difference at all betwixt the one and the other, but that the Eye was Conſcious or Perceptive of what it suffered, but the Mirror not. But now the Mind or Intellect being ſuperadded to this Sentient Eye,

Eye, and exerting its Active and more Comprehensive Power upon all that which was reflected from the Mirror, and passively perceived by the Sentient Eye, as it doth actually and Intellectually comprehend the same Things over again, which Sense had perceived before in another Manner (of which we must speak afterward) so it proceeds further, and compares all the several Parts of this ingenious *Machine* or Self-mover one with another, taking Notice, First, of the Spring, as the Original and Cause of all the Motion in it ; of the Chain or String, by the Mediation of which that Motion is communicated to the Fusee ; of the Balance that reciprocating moderates the Motion of the several Wheels, some greater, some lesser, propagating the Motion from one to another ; of the Horary Circle divided into Equal Parts ; and, lastly, of the Index, moving round about the Circle, through equal Space in equal Time, all these in their several <sup>f</sup> *Relations* to one another and the Whole. Whereupon the Intellect, besides Figure, Colour, Magnitude and Motions, raises and excites within it self the Intelligible Ideas of Cause, Effect, Means, End,

<sup>f</sup> Schemes.

Priority and Posteriority, Equality and Inequality, Order and Proportion, Symmetry and Asymmetry, Aptitude and Inaptitude, Sign and Thing signified, Whole and Part, in a manner all the Logical and Relative Notions that are. Whereas the Sentient Eye, by which this whole Mechanism was represented to the Intellect, perceived none of all these things; neither Cause nor Effect, nor Equality nor Irregularity, nor Order nor Proportions, nor Symmetry nor Asymmetry, nor Sign nor Thing signified, nor Whole nor Part; since there is no Colour nor Figure in any of these Things. And if the Sentient Eye could dispute with the Mind or Intellect, it would Confidently avow and maintain, that there were no such Entities as those in this *Self-moving Machine*, and that the Understanding was abused and deceived in those Apprehensions; Since all that was impressed from the Object was, by the Sentient Eye, faithfully transmitted to it, and the Intellect received all its Intelligence or Information from it. And to make its Cause Good, Sense would appeal to the Mirrour or Crystal Globe standing by, in which there were no

Automaton.

Images

Images of any of those Invisible Ideas or Logical Notions Reflected. Wherefore since Sense doth freely conceive and ingenuously own, that none of these Ideas are passively and phantasmatically stamped upon it from the Objects without; be they what they will, Real or not Real, certain it is that they are the Objects of the Intellect, and they must of Necessity be raised in it by its own Innate Vigour and Activity.

5. INDEED though it should be granted, that the <sup>h</sup> *Relations* of Cause and Effect, Whole and Parts, and the like, were Meer Notions of the Mind and Modes of conceiving in us, that only signify what Things are Relatively to Intellect; yet it would not follow from hence, that they had no Reality at all, but were absolute Non Entities; Because Intellect being a Real Thing, and that which indeed hath more of Entity in it than Matter or Body, the Modifications of Intellect must needs be as Real Things as the Modifications of Matter; and therefore Cause and Effect, Whole and Part, Symmetry and Asymmetry, and all the Other Logical Notions would have as much Reality in them as Hard

<sup>h</sup> Schemas.

and

and Soft, Moist and Dry, Hot and Cold, which, though but Modifications of Matter, are looked upon as very Real Things ; and such Intellectuals as were Relative to Intellect be as Real, as those Sensible Phantasms which are Relative to Sense. But this must not be granted, that the Modes of Conception in the Understanding, (where all Truth is) are disagreeable to the Reality of the Things conceived by them ; and so being unconformable, are therefore False. Wherefore that these <sup>i</sup> Relations are not (Though Sense doth not perceive them) meer Notions or Figments of the Mind, without any Fundamental Reality in the Things themselves without us, corresponding to them, appears from hence, because Art and Wisdom are most Real Things, which beget Real Effects of the greatest Moment and Consequence in Nature and Human Life of any Thing ; and yet are Conversant about nothing else but only the Relations, Proportions, Aptitudes of Things to one another, and to certain Ends. Now if these were all meer Figments, and nothing but Logical Notions or <sup>k</sup> Beings of Reason, then there could be no such Realities produced

<sup>i</sup> Schems. <sup>k</sup> Entia Rationis.

out

out of them. Nay, then Art and Wisdom themselves must needs be Figments and Fancies, and likewise it would be indifferent whatever a Man did in order to any End or Effect ; and all Men (as *Protagoras* held) would be really alike wise and skilful. Then there would be no other Extrinscal Causality of any Effect but that of Efficiency, Force or Power ; which, in Corporeal Things, is nothing else but Local Motion. And no such Thing as the Causality of Skill and Art (that is commonly called the Exemplary Cause) distinct from Force, Power and blind Impetuosity. Nay, then Virtue, Justice, Honesty, must of Necessity be Figments also, because Moral Good and Evil are Schetical and Relative Things ; and which is more yet, External Convenience and Inconvenience, Utility and Inutility themselves, be nothing else but Fancies also.

6. But though the Verdict and Testimony of Sense ought to be admitted as authentick in this Particular, as to what is or is not Passively impressed upon us from without, because it is not possible that any thing should be impressed upon the Intellect from Sensible things, but it must needs pass through the Medium of Sense, and so be trasmitted thereby

by

by unto the Understanding, which cannot be, unless Sense be Conscious thereof; Yet notwithstanding, Sense is not at all to be heard, as to the Reality or Non Reality of these Relative Ideas, it being no Competent Judge in that Controversy. Because since the Knowledge of Things doth not arise from the Activity, Energy and Radiation of the Objects without upon us, Passively Received by Sense, but from the Active and Comprehensive Energy or Activity of the Mind it self, as we have already observed, <sup>1</sup> *That in Knowing all Things, it rather useth its own Power, than that of the Things which are known. For since all Judgement is the Act of him that judgeth, it must needs be that every one perform his own Work, not by the Power of another, but by his Own Faculty,* as the afore-commended Boetius expresseth it. We ought not to conclude that those Relative Ideas are therefore meer Figments or Modes of conceiving in us, because Sense is not Conscious of any such Things Passively impressed upon

<sup>1</sup> In Cognoscendo cuncta, suâ potiùs facultate quàm rerum quæ cognoscuntur uti. Cum enim omne Judicium Judicantis actus existat, necesse est ut suam quisque operam non ex alienâ, sed ex propriâ facultate perficiat.

it from Without, and because that lower and Narrow Faculty Comprehends them not; but rather acquiesce in the Sentiment of that larger and more Comprehensive Faculty the Intellect, that judges of Things by exerting its own Active Power upon them.

7. WHEREFORE, if we well consider it, we shall find that not only the Beauty and Pulschritude, but also the Strength and Ability of Natural and Corporeal Things themselves, depend upon these Relations and Proportions of one Thing to another. For what is Pulschritude in Visible Objects, or Harmony in Sounds, but the Proportion, Symmetry and Commensuration of Figures, and Sounds to one another, whereby Infinity is Measured and Determined, and Multiplicity and Variety vanquished and triumphed over by Unity, and by that means they become grateful and pleasing Objects to the Ear and Eye of Intellectual Auditors and Spectators, there being as it were certain Ludicrous Irritations and Symbolical Resemblances of Art and Wisdom, nay, and Virtue too (as we shall shew afterward) that is, of Intellectuality in general appearing in them, Whereby the Mind beholds as it were its own Face and Image reflected to it self from a Corporeal Glas.

BUT

BUT because many will be ready to say here, that Beauty is nothing but a Fancy neither, and therefore cannot argue any Reality in these Schetical Things; I add that even the Strength and Ability of Corporeal Things themselves depends upon the mutual <sup>m</sup> *Relations* and Proportions of one thing to another. And this all Men will be sensible of as something. And the Truth hereof Evidently appears from the Mechanical Powers. Nay, the Health and Strength of the Body of Animals, arises from the Configuration of the Organical Parts, and the fit Contemperation of Humours and the Insensible Parts with one another; so that if this Harmonical <sup>n</sup> *Temperature* of the whole Body be disturbed and put out of Tune, Weakness and <sup>o</sup> *Languishing* will immediately seize upon it. Nay, doth not all the Strength, as well as the Comeliness and Beauty of an Army, consist in Order? And therefore if we should suppose some subtle Sophister, and Popular Orator, sent from the Quarters of an Enemy into a Vast, Numerous and puissant Army, that should insinuate into the Common Soldiers so far, as generally to perswade them, that Or-

<sup>m</sup> Scheses. <sup>n</sup> Crafis. <sup>o</sup> Languor.

der was nothing but a meer Fancy or Logical Notion ; a Thing craftily devised by their Commanders, meerly to keep them in Subjection, that they might the better tyrannize over them, and rule them as they please ; insomuch that they should all at length altogether neglect their Ranks and Files, and put themselves wholly into Disorder and Confusion, and in this Fashion prepare themselves to encounter their approaching Enemy, would they not hereby be betrayed to certain Ruin, though the Enemy should be but a Small Handful of Men, but well ordered and well commanded ? For Order is that which makes Things, <sup>p</sup> *with United Forces*, to conspire all to one End, whereby the Whole hath the Force and Ability of all the several Particular Strengths conjoined and United into one.

8. THEREFORE I say, in the next place, returning to our former Instance of an *Automaton*, or Horologe, that though those several Relative Ideas of Cause, Effect, Symmetry, Proportion, Order, Whole and Part, and the like, considered formally as <sup>q</sup> *Conceptions of the Mind*, be only in the Intellect it self (as the Ideas and Conceptions of all other Things

<sup>p</sup> *Junctis Viribus.*      <sup>q</sup> *Νοηματα.*

likewise are;) yet notwithstanding the Intellect doth not forge or falsify any thing in apprehending of them, in that Material <sup>1</sup> *Self-Mover* represented to it by Sense, because all the several <sup>2</sup> *Relations* are fundamentally and Really in the same, though they could not be stamped upon Sense materially, and received passively from it. And therefore that the true Nature, Formal <sup>3</sup> *Reason*, Essence and Idea of this <sup>4</sup> *Self-Mover*, Watch or Horologe, is really compounded and made up of those several <sup>5</sup> *Relations*, as Ingredients into it, so that it cannot possibly be understood without them; though Sense could not reach to the Comprehension of any one of them, much less of this whole Logical System or <sup>6</sup> *Collection* of them. It being impossible that the Nature of <sup>7</sup> *a Self-Mover*, Horologe or Watch, should be otherwise Understood than by the Comprehension of these Relative Ideas; and by such a Logical, Unitive, Comprehensive Power and Activity, as can frame out of them one Idea of the Whole. For an Horologe or Watch is not meer Silver or Gold, Brass and

<sup>1</sup> Automaton.

<sup>2</sup> Scheses.

<sup>3</sup> Ratio.

<sup>4</sup> Automaton.

<sup>5</sup> Scheses.

<sup>6</sup> Compages.

<sup>7</sup> Automaton.

Steel, any way jumbled, mingled or confounded together, but it is such an Apt and Proportionable Disposition of Certain Quantities of those several Materials into several Parts of such certain Figures, contempered together, as may Harmoniously conspire to make up one Equal and Uniform Motion, which running as it were parallel with the Motion of Time, and passing round the Horary Circle, and being measured in that Horary Circle, may also measure out and distinguish the Quantity of that Silent and Successive Flux, which, like a still and deep River, carries down all Things along with it indiscernably, and without any Noise; and which, in its Progressive Motion, treads so lightly and softly, that it leaves no Traces, Prints or Footsteps at all behind it.

9. WHEREFORE the Eye of Sense, though it be fixed never so much upon the Material Outside of this <sup>a</sup> *Self-Mover*, yet it never comprehends the Formal Nature of it within it self, as it is <sup>b</sup> *a Whole* made up of several Parts, United not so much by Corporeal Contact or Continuity, as by their Relative Conspiracy to one Certain End. Sense being

<sup>a</sup> Automaton.      <sup>b</sup> Totum.

like one of those narrow Telescopes, by which the Eye looking upon the Moon, can never view it all at once, and see the Site and Configuration of all the several Mountains and Valleys, and Seas in it, and have one comprehensive Idea of the Whole; but taking it in the Piece-meal Part after Part, leaves the Intelligent Spectator afterwards to compile and make up one Entire Draught or Map of Stenography out of all those several Particular or Partial Views.

So that if we will speak properly, we cannot say that the Eye sees any <sup>c</sup> *Machina* or <sup>d</sup> *Self-mover*, for it is but variously affected from the Material Part of it, perceiving several Passions in it self from the several Colours and Figures of it, it being so far from comprehending the Formal <sup>e</sup> *Reason* of it, as it is a <sup>f</sup> *Whole* made up of several Parts, according to several <sup>g</sup> *Relations* and Proportions contributing thereto, that it cannot reach to any one Relative Idea, neither doth bare Fancy go any further than Sense. Or else the Difference between Intellect and Sense may be resembled by the Difference betwixt the Sense

<sup>c</sup> *Machina.*      <sup>d</sup> *Automaton.*

<sup>e</sup> *Ratio.*      <sup>f</sup> *Totum.*      <sup>g</sup> *Schemes.*

of Sight and Touch. For Touch groping, perceives but as it were a Point at once, the Eye Comprehends the whole Superficies. Sense sees particular Things absolutely, Intellect Compares them according to those Relations they have to one another, has a Comprehensive Idea of a <sup>h</sup> *Whole* made up of several Parts as one Thing. And therefore the Form, <sup>i</sup> *Reason* or Intelligible Idea of a <sup>k</sup> *Self-Mover* or Horologe, was never stamped or impressed upon the Soul from without, but upon occasion of the Sensible Idea excited and exerted from the inward Active and Comprehensive Power of the Intellect it self.

10. THERE are many other such Ideas of the Mind, of certain <sup>l</sup> *Wholes* made up of several Corporeal Parts, which, though Sometimes Locally discontinued, yet are joyned together by <sup>m</sup> *Relations*, and Habitudes to one another (founded in some Actions of them, as they are Cogitative Beings) and by Order all conspiring into one thing ; which, though they are altogether imperceptible by Sense, and therefore were never stamped or impressed upon the Mind from the Objects without ;

<sup>h</sup> Totum.

<sup>i</sup> Totums.

<sup>j</sup> Ratio.

<sup>m</sup> Schemas.

<sup>k</sup> Automaton.

yet,

yet, notwithstanding, are not meer Figments or <sup>a</sup> *Beings of Reason*, but Things of the Greatest Reality, founded in certain Actions of Thinking and Cogitative Beings; which are altogether imperceptible by Sense, and therefore could not possibly be outwardly stamped upon the Mind; as for Example, a Polity or Commonwealth, called an Artificial Man, which is a Company of many United together by Consent or Contract under one Government, to be regulated by some certain Laws as it were by one Will for the Good of the Whole; where, though the Eye may see the Particular Persons, (or at least their outsides) that are the respective Members thereof, yet it can neither see the Bond which unites them together, which is nothing but Relation, nor comprehend the <sup>o</sup> *Whole* that is made up of them, that is, a Polity or Commonwealth, according to the Formal Nature of it, which is an Idea that proceeds meerly from the Unitive Power and Activity of the Mind it self.

IN a word, all the Ideas of things called Artificial or Mechanical, contain something in them that never came from Sense, nor was ever stamped upon the Soul from the Objects

<sup>a</sup> *Entia Rationis.*      <sup>o</sup> *Totum.*

without, which, though it be not meerly notional or Imaginary, but really belongs to the Nature of that Thing, yet is no otherwise than Intellectually Comprehended. As for Example, an House or Palace is not only Stone, Brick, Mortar, Timber, Iron, Glass, heaped together; but the Very Essence and Formal <sup>p</sup> Reason of it is made up of Relative or Schetical Notions, it being a certain Disposition of those several Materials into a <sup>q</sup> Whole or <sup>r</sup> Collection, consisting of several Parts, Rooms, Stairs, Passages, Doors, Chimneys, Windows, convenient for Habitation, and fit for the several Uses of Men; in which there is the Logick of Whole and Parts, Order, Proportion, Symmetry, Aptitude, Cincinnity, all complicated with Wood, Stone, Iron and Glass, as it were informing and adorning the Rude and Confused Mass of Matter, and making it both beautiful and Serviceable. And therefore for this Cause, no Man t' it is in his Wits will say, that a stately and Royal Palace hath therefore less Reality, Entity, and Substantiality in it, than an Heap of Rubbish confusedly cast together; because, forsooth, the Idea of it partly

<sup>p</sup> Ratio.

<sup>q</sup> Totum.

<sup>r</sup> Compages.

confists

consists of Logical Notions, which are thought to be *Meer Imaginary Things*; whereas the *Whole* is all Solid Matter without this Notional Form. For this Logical Form, which is the Passive Stamp or Print of Intellectuality in it, the first Archetypes contained in the Idea or Skill of the Architect, and thence introduced into the Rude Matter, successively with much Pains and Labour, is the only Thing that distinguishes it from *meer Dirt and Rubbish*, and gives it the Essence of an House or Palace. And it hath therefore the more of Entity in it, because it partakes of Art or Intellectuality. But the Eye or Sense of a Brute, though it have as much Passively impressed upon it from without, as the Soul of a Man hath, when it looks upon the most Royal and Magnificent Palace, if it should see all the Inside also as well as the Outside, could not Comprehend from thence the Formal Idea and Nature of an House or Palace, which nothing but an Active Intellectual Principle can reach unto.

11. NEITHER is this true of such Things only as are Commonly called Artificial, but also of Natural Compounded Things, such

\* Totum.

as Plants and Animals are. And indeed if we Consider Things Philosophically, we shall not find any such Essential Difference as is Commonly supposed, betwixt Things called Artificial and Natural. For there is a Nature in all Artificial Things, and again, an Artifice in all Compounded Natural Things. Plants and Animals being nothing else but Artificial Mechanisms, the latter of which Especially are contrived with infinitely more Wit, Variety and Curiosity than any Mechanisms or <sup>Self-Movers</sup> that were ever yet produced by Human Art. Wherefore the true Form of an Animal, if we attend only to the Mechanism of the Body (for we must acknowledge something else not only in Men but also in Brutes, if they have any Cogitation besides Mechanism, which is a Substance of another Nature, or a Cogitative Being united to the Body) is an Idea that includes many Relative and Logical Notions in it, and therefore could never be stamped upon the Soul by Sense; For Sense only takes Notice of several Colours and Figures either in the outside or the inside of any Animals, but doth not sum them up into one <sup>Whole</sup>. But the Idea of it, as col-

<sup>2</sup> Automatons.      <sup>u</sup> Totum.

lected

lected into one Mechanical <sup>x</sup> *Self-Mover*, consisting of many Organical Parts fitly proportioned together, and all Harmoniously conspiring to one End, to make it every way a fit Habitation for a Cogitative Substance to reside in, in respect of Nutrition, Local Motion, Sense, and all other Functions of Life: Such an Idea, I say, that hath something of Logick in it, is only Conceivable by the Unique, Active and Comprehensive Power of the Intellect.

THE same is to be affirmed of that huge and Vast *Automaton*, which some will have to be an Animal likewise, the Visible World or Material Universe, Commonly called <sup>y</sup> *Cosmos* or *Mundus*, the World, from the Beauty of it: Whether we mean thereby that one Single Vortex, to which our Planetary Earth belongs, or a System of as many Vortices as we see fixed Stars in the Heavens, their Central Suns and Circumferential Planets moving round about them respectively. Now Sense looking round about, and making many Particular Views, sees now one fixed Star, and then another; now the Moon, then the Sun; here a Mountain, there a Valley; at one Time

<sup>x</sup> Automaton. <sup>y</sup> Κόσμος or Mundus.

a River, at another a Sea, Particular Vegetables and Animals one after another: But it cannot sum up or unite all together, nor rise to any Comprehensive Idea of the Whole at once, as it is one or many Mechanical <sup>a</sup> *Self-Movers* most Curiously and Artificially framed of innumerable Parts; In which there are all manner of Logical <sup>a</sup> *Relations* possible offered to the Mind, but all so fitly proportioned with such admirable Symmetries and Correspondencies in respect of one another and the Whole, that they perfectly conspire into one most Orderly and Harmonious Form.

HITHERTO therefore we have seen, that the Relative Ideas that we have in our Mind, are not Passions impressed upon the Soul from the Objects without; but arise from the innate Activity of the Mind it self; and therefore because the Essences or Ideas of all Compounded Corporeal Things themselves, whether Artificial or Natural; that is, whether made by the Artifice of Men or Nature, always necessarily include these Logical <sup>b</sup> *Relations* in them, we have demonstratively proved from thence, that no Corporeal Compounded

<sup>a</sup> Automatons.

<sup>a</sup> Schemes.

<sup>b</sup> Schemes.

Thing whatsoever is understood by Sense, nor the Idea of it passively stamped upon the Mind, from the Objects without, but comprehended only by the large Unitive Power of the Intellect, and exerted from the Innate Activity thereof.

12. BUT the Case is still clearer concerning those other Ideas before-mentioned, of the several Modes of Cogitative Beings, or such as involve or include some Relation to them; that these are not by the Passive Impresses from the Outward Objects by Sense; although they are often occasionally invited and drawn forth by them. Which we shall illustrate by the former Instance of an Artificial <sup>c</sup> *Self-Mover* exhibited first to the View of Sense, and afterward actively comprehended by the Understanding. After the Mind hath framed a clear Idea of this <sup>d</sup> *Self-Mover* within it self, the End or Design whereof is to measure the Equal Motion either of the Sun and Heavens, or Earth, (according to Different Astronomical Hypotheses) by the Equal Motion of this <sup>e</sup> *Self-Mover*, and so to distinguish or mark out to us the Quantities of that silent and undiscerned Flux of Time; and

<sup>c</sup> Automaton.

<sup>d</sup> Automaron.

<sup>e</sup> Automaton.

when.

when it hath considered how aptly condu-  
cible Every part of this Mechanism is to  
that Design, and how there is neither the least  
Redundancy nor Deficiency in any Thing in  
order thereunto, and of the Beauty and Ele-  
gancy of the Fabrick, making a further and  
a more Inward Reflection upon the same, it  
plainly perceives this accurate Contrivance to  
be but a Passive Print or Stamp of some  
Active and Living Art or Skill upon it: where-  
fore the Ideas of Art and Skill are upon this  
Occasion naturally exerted from it; neither  
doth it rest in considering of Art and Skill  
abstractedly, but because these are Modes of  
an Exist<sup>t</sup>ent Cogitative Being, it thinks pre-  
sently of some Particular Intelligent Being,  
the Artificer or Author of this curious Fa-  
brick, and looking further into it, finds his  
Name also engraven in Legible Characters  
upon the same, whereupon he forthwith  
pronounces the Sound of it. Whereas the  
Living Eye, that is, Sense alone in its ante-  
cedent View, as it could not espy any Logical  
<sup>f</sup> *Relations* or Notions there, so neither can it  
perceive any Ideas of Art or Skill in it, they  
having neither Figure nor Colour in them,

<sup>f</sup> *Schemes.*

nor of Author and Artificer, any more than it could see the Sound of the Artificer's Name in the engraven Sculptures or Characters of it; for the Eye could see no more than was represented in or reflected from the Crystal Globe or Mirror: Wherefore the Ideas of Art and Skill, Author and Artificer were not Passively imprinted upon the Intellect from the Material <sup>s</sup> *Self-Mover*, but only occasionally invited from the Mind it self, as the Figures of the Engraven Letters did not passively impress the Sound of the Artificer's Name upon him, but only occasion him to exert it from his own Activity.

13. Just in the same manner it happens many times in the Contemplation of that Great <sup>h</sup> *Self-Mover* of the Material Universe, which is the <sup>i</sup> *Artifice of God*, the Artifice of the best Mechanist, though there be no more passively impressed upon us from it, than there is upon the Diaphanous Air, or Liquid Ether contiguous to all Solid Bodies by Local Motion, of which only Sensitive Beings have a Conscious Perception; yet there is a Wonderful Scene of various Thoughts and Motions raised in the Mind thereupon, which

<sup>s</sup> Automaton.

<sup>b</sup> Automaton.

<sup>i</sup> Θεοῦ τεχνητός.

are only occasionally invited by those Stamps and Impressions made from the Material Fabric, and its various Furniture without, but owe their true Original and Efficiency to nothing else but the Innate Vigour and Activity of the Mind it self. Some of which we have already Instanced in, the Ideas of those Relative <sup>k</sup> *Considerations* of Corporeal Things themselves and their Parts to one another; by means of which the Intellect rises up to that Comprehensive View of the Natures of Particular Corporeal Things, and the Universal *Mundane* System within it self all at once; which Sense perceiving only by little and little, and taking in as it were Point after Point, cannot sum up its Partial Perceptions into the entire Idea of any one <sup>1</sup> *Whole*. But the Intellect doth not rest here, but upon occasion of those Corporeal Things thus Comprehended in themselves, naturally rises higher to the framing and exciting of certain Ideas from within it self, of other things not existing in those sensible Objects, but absolutely Incorporeal: For being ravished with the Contemplation of this admirable Mechanism and Artificial Contrivance of the Material Universe,

<sup>k</sup> *Scheses.*      <sup>1</sup> *Totum.*

forthwith it naturally conceives it to be nothing else but the Passive Stamp, Print and Signature of some Living Art and Wisdom; as the Pattern, Archetype and Seal of it, and so excites from within it self an Idea of that Divine Art and Wisdom. Nay, considering further, how all Things in this great *Mundane* Machine or Animal (as the Antients would have it) are contrived, not only for the Beauty of the whole, but also for the Good of Every Part in it, that is endued with Life and Sense, it exerts another Idea, *viz.* of *Goodness and Benignity from within it self, besides that of Art and Wisdom*, as the Queen Regent and Empress of Art, whereby Art is Employed, Regulated and determined; now both these Things, whereof the First is Art, Wisdom and Knowledge; the Second, Goodness, Benignity and Morality, being looked upon as Modes of some Intellectual Being or Mind in which they exist, it from hence presently makes up an Idea of God, as the Author or Architect of this great and Boundless Machine; A Mind infinitely Good and Wise; and so as it were resounds and re-echoes back the Great Creator's Name, which from those Visible Characters impressed upon the Material Universe, had pierced loudly into its

N

Ears,

178 *Concerning Eternal and*

Ears, but in such an indiscernable manner, that Sense listening never so attentively, could not perceive the least Murmur or Whisper of it. And this is the most Natural Scale by which the Intellectual Mind in the Contemplation of Corporeal Things ascends to God; from the Passive Prints and Signatures of that one Art and Wisdom that appears in the Universe, by taking Notice from thence of the Exemplary or Archetypal Cause, one Infinite and Eternal Mind setting his Seal upon all. For as he that hears a Consort of Musicians playing a Lesson, consisting of six or eight several Parts, all Conspiring to make up one Harmony; will immediately Conclude, that there was some other Cause of that Harmony besides those several Particular Efficients, that struck the several Instruments; for every one of them could be but a Cause of his own Part which he played: But the Unity of the whole Harmony, into which all the several Parts conspire, must needs proceed from the Art and Musical Skill of some one Mind, the Exemplary and Archetypal Cause of that Vocal Harmony, which was but a Passive Print or Stamp of it: So though the Atheist might possibly perswade himself, that every particular Creature was the first

Author

Author or Efficient of that Part which it played in the Universe, by a certain Innate Power of its own; yet all the Parts of the *Mundane* System Conspiring into one Perfect Harmony, there must of Necessity be some One Universal Mind, the Archetypal and Exemplary Cause thereof, Containing the Plot of the whole *Mundane* Musick, as one entire Thing made up of so many several Parts within himself.

14. BUT that oftentimes there is more taken Notice of and perceived by the Mind, both in the Sensible Objects themselves, and by occasion of them, than was impressed from them, or passively received by Sense; which therefore must needs proceed from some Inward Active Principle in that which Perceives, I shall make it further appear by some other Instances.

FOR, first, let a Brute and a Man at the same time be made Spectators of one and the same Artificial Statue, Picture or Landskip; here the Brute will passively receive all that is Impressed from the Outward Object upon Sense by Local Motion, as well as the Man, all the Several Colours and Figures of it: And yet the Man will presently perceive something in this Statue or Picture,

which the Brute takes no Notice of at all, *viz.* Beauty and Pulchritude, and Symmetry, besides the Liveliness of the Effigies and Pourtrai�ure. The Eye of the Brute being every jot as Good a Glass or Mirror, and perhaps endued with a more perspicacious Sense or Power of Passive Perception, than that of a Man.

OR again, Let both a Man and a Brute at the same time hear the same Musical Airs, the Brute will only be sensible of Noise and Sounds; but the Man will also perceive Harmony in them, and be very much delighted with it; nay, even Enthusiastically transported by it. Wherefore the Brute perceiving all the Sounds, as well as the Man, but nothing of the Harmony, the Difference must needs arise from some inward Active Principle or Anticipation in the Man, which the Brute hath not.

AND indeed the Reason is the same both in VISIBLES and AUDIBLES; for the Sense of a Man, by reason of its Vicinity and Neighbourhood to Reason and Intellectuality, lodg'd in the same Soul with it, must needs be Coloured with some Tincture of it; or have some Passive Impresses of the same upon it: and therefore when it finds or meets with *in*

*sensible Objects* any Foot-steps or Resemblances thereof, any Thing that hath Cognition with Intellectuality; as Proportion, Symmetry and Order have, being the Passive Stamps and Impresses of Art and Skill (which are Intellectual Things) upon Matter, it must needs be highly gratified with the same. But the Soul of a Brute having no Intellectual Anticipations in it, but barely Suffering from the Corporeal Objects without, can have no Sense of any Thing but what their Activity impresseth upon it.

NAV further, the Man will also espy some Symbolical Resemblances of Morality, of Vertue and Vice in the variously proportioned Sounds and Airs; for there are <sup>m</sup> *Ethical* (as Aristotle hath observed) as well as <sup>n</sup> *Enthusiastical Harmonies*, as the Physiognomists in like manner observe Signatures of Morality in the Countenances of Men and their Pictures, which it is yet less possible that a Brute should be sensible of; these Differences arising, not from the Absolute Nature of the Objects without, or their bare Impression which they make; but the Different Analogy which they have to some inward

<sup>m</sup> Ηθικαὶ <sup>n</sup> ἐνθουσιασμικαὶ ἀρμονίας.

and Active Anticipations which they meet withal in the Percipient. For the Man hath certain Moral Anticipations and Signatures stamped inwardly upon his Soul, which makes him presently take Notice of whatsoever symbolizes with it in Corporeal Things ; but the Brute hath none.

15. AND this will still further appear, if we again compare the Judgement of some Excellent Artists in Painting and Musick with that of an Ordinary Vulgar Person, that hath not any acquired Skill in either Faculty. For the Skilful and expert Limner will observe many Elegancies and Curiosities of Art, and be highly pleased with several Strokes and Shadows in a Picture, where a Common Eye can discern nothing at all ; and a Musical Artist hearing a Consort of exact Musicians playing some excellent Composure of many Parts, will be exceedingly ravished with many Harmonical Airs and Touches, that a Vulgar Ear will be utterly insensible of. Nay, such an one perhaps would be more pleased with the streperous Noise of a Single Fiddle, or the Rustical Musick of the Country-Bagpipes, or the Dull Humming of a Jew's Trump, than the fullest and most exquisitely composed Harmony.

AND

AND the Reason is the same with what was before suggested, because the Artists of either kind have many Inward Anticipations of Skill and Art in their Minds; which being awakened by those Passive Impressions of the same Skill or Art in the Outward Objects that Strike upon their Senses, there arises immediately an Inward Grateful Sense and Sympathy from the Correspondence and Analogy that is betwixt them; Art and Skill in the Mind of the Musical Hearer, finding *something akin* to its self in those Harmonious Airs, some Foot-steps and Resemblances of it self gratefully closing with them. Of which Vital Sympathy, there is vulgarly thought to be some Resemblance in Nature; when, upon the striking of a String in one Viol, another String, that is an Unison to it in a distant Viol, will dance and leap; and that not from any Mechanical Cause (as some conceive) Passively only, but from a Vital and Active Principle in Nature, which is affected with Concord and Harmony. Now there is yet a Pulchritude of another kind; a more Interior Symmetry and Harmony in the Relations, Proportions, Aptitudes and Corre-

*P. Eoxyinis 71.*

N 4

sponden-

spondencies of Things to one another in the Great *Mundane* System, or Vital Machine of the Universe, which is all Musically and Harmonically composed; for which Cause the Antients made *Pan*, that is, Nature to play upon an Harp; but Sense, which only passively perceives particular outward Objects, doth here, like the Brute, hear nothing but meer Noise and Sound and Clatter, but no Musick or Harmony at all; having no Active Principle and Anticipation within it self to comprehend it by, and correspond or vitally sympathize with it; whereas the Mind of a Rational and Intellectual Being will be ravished and Enthusiastically transported in the Contemplation of it; and, of its own Accord, dance to this Pipe of *Pan*, Nature's Intellectual Musick and Harmony.

16. But I shall yet further illustrate this Business, that the Mind may Actively Comprehend more in the outward Objects of Sense, and by occasion of them, than is passively received and impressed from them, by another Instance. Suppose a learned written or printed Volume, held before the Eye of a Brute-Creature or illiterate Person; either of them will passively receive all that is impressed upon Sense from those Delineations; to whom there will

will be nothing but several Scrawls or Lines of Ink drawn upon White Paper. But if a Man that hath inward Anticipations of Learning in him, look upon them, He will immediately have another Comprehension of them than that of Sense, and a strange Scene of Thoughts presently represented to his Mind from them; he will see Heaven, Earth, Sun, Moon and Stars, Comets, Meteors, Elements, in those Inky Delineations; he will read profound Theorems of Philosophy, Geometry, Astronomy in them; learn a great deal of new Knowledge from them that he never understood before, and thereby justly admire the Wisdom of the Composer of them: Not that all this was passively stamped upon his Soul by Sense from those Characters; for Sense, as I said before, can perceive nothing here but Inky Scrawls, and the intelligent Reader will many times Correct his Copy, finding *Errata's* in it; but because his Mind was before furnished with Certain inward Anticipations, that such Characters signify the Elements of certain Sounds, those Sounds, certain Notions or Cogitations of the Mind; and because he hath an Active Power of Exciting any such Cogitations within himself, he reads in those sensible Delineations, the Passive

Passive Stamps or Prints of another Man's Wisdom or Knowledge upon them, and also learns Knowledge and Instruction from them, not as infused into his Mind from those sensible Characters, but by reason of those Hints and Significations thereby Proposed to it, accidentally kindled, awakened and excited in it: For all but the Phantasms of black Inky Strokes and Figures, arises from the Inward Activity of his own Mind: Wherefore this Instance in it self shews, how the Activity of the Mind may Comprehend more in and from sensible Objects, than is passively imprinted by them upon Sense.

BUT now, in the Room of this Artificial Book in Volumes, let us Substitute the Book of Nature, the whole Visible and Material Universe, printed all over with the Passive Characters and Impressions of Divine Wisdom and Goodness, but legible only to an Intellectual Eye; for to the Sense both of Man and Brute, there appears nothing else in it but as in the other, so many Inky Scrawls, *i. e.* nothing but Figures and Colours; but the Mind or Intellect, which hath an Inward and Active Participation of the same Divine Wisdom that made it; and being printed all over with the same Archety-

pal

pal Seal, upon occasion of those sensible Delineations represented to it, and taking notice of whatsoever is cognate to it, Exerting its own Inward Activity from thence, will not have only a Wonderful Scene and large Prospect of other Thoughts laid open before it, and Variety of Knowledge, Logical, Mathematical, Metaphysical, Moral displayed; but also clearly Read the Divine Wisdom and Goodness, in every Page of this great Volume, as it were written in large and legible Characters.





## B O O K IV.

## C H A P. III.

I.



E have hitherto shewed, that there are many Ideas of the Mind, which, though the Cogitations of them be often occasionally invited from the Motion or Appulse of Sensible Objects without made upon our Bodies; yet notwithstanding the Ideas themselves could not possibly be stamped or Impressed upon the Soul from them, because Sense takes no Cognizance at all of any such Things in those Corporeal Objects, and therefore they must needs arise from the Innate Vigour and Activity of the Mind it self. Such as are, *First*, the Relative Ideas of the several *Schemes* or *Respects* which

which are betwixt Corporeal Things themselves compared with one another. Which Relative Ideas being not Comprehended by Sense, and yet notwithstanding, the Natures of all Compounded Corporeal Things, whether Artificial or Natural, that is, whether made by the Artifice of Men or Nature, Consisting of them, We have demonstratively proved from thence, that the Natures of no Compounded Corporeal Things can possibly be Known or Comprehended by Sense. And again, the Ideas of Cogitative Beings, and the several Modes of them, together with all such Notions as involve some Respect or Relation to them. For although these also be often occasionally invited and Elicited by the Objects of Sense, when the Mind, in the Contemplation of them by its own Active Strength, perceives the Signatures of Art, Counsels, Contrivance, Wisdom, nay, and Goodness also, (all which are Modes of Cogitative Beings) printed upon them; yet they cannot owe their Being or Efficiency to the Activity of those Outward Objects, but meerly to the Activity of the Mind it self.

I SHOULD now proceed to shew, that Even those simple Corporeal Things themselves, which by Sense we have a Passive Perception

ception of, in Individual Bodies without us, are also known and understood by the Active Power of the Mind Exerting its own Intelligible Ideas upon them.

2. **T H A T** Sensation is not Knowledge of those Corporeal Things that we sensibly perceive, we have before largely shewed ; and indeed it sufficiently appears from hence, because upon the Seeing of Light and Colours, though never so clearly, the Feeling of Heat and Cold smartly, the Hearing of loud Sounds and Noises, we naturally enquire further, What this Light and Colours, Heat and Cold, and Sounds are, which is an undoubted Acknowledgement that we have not a Clear and Satisfactory Comprehension of those Things which make so strong a Stroke and Impression upon our Senfes ; and therefore the Mind desires to Master and Conquer them by its Own Active Strength and Power, and to Comprehend them by some Ideas of its own, which are not Foreign, but Native, Domestick and Intrinsical to it.

Now if Sense it self be not Knowledge, much less can any Secondary or Derivative Result from Sense be Knowledge ; for this would be a more Obscure, Shadowy and Evanid Thing than Sense it self is. As when

the Image of a Man's Face, received in a Mirror or Looking-glass, is reflected from thence into a Second Mirror, and so forward into a Third ; still the further it goes, the more Obscure, Confused and imperfect it grows, till at last it becomes altogether imperceptible. Or as in the Circlings and Undulations of Water, caused by the falling of a Stone into it, that are successively propagated from one to another ; the further and wider they go, the Waves are still the less, slower and weaker, till at length they become quite undiscernable. Or as a Secondary Echo, that is, the Echo of an Echo, falls as much short of the Primary Echo in Proportion, as that doth of the Original Voice. Or, *Lastly*, If we could suppose a Shadow to cast a Shadow, this Secondary Shadow, or Projection of a Shadow, would fall as much short of the Primary Shadow, as that did of the Substance it self. So if the Knowledge of Corporeal Things were but a Secondary and Derivative Result from Sense, (though it cannot be conceived that the Passion of Sense should ray upon the Intellect, so as to beget a Secondary Passion there, any more than one Shadow should cast another) then Knowledge would be much weaker Perception of them than Sense it self is,

is, and nothing but as it were the Secondary Reflection of an Image, or the Remote Circlings and Undulations of the fluid Water, or the meer Echo of the Echo of an Original Voice: Or, *Lastly*, nothing but the Shadow of the Shadow of a Substance. Whereas it is a far more real, substantial and satisfactory, more penetrative and comprehensive Perception than Sense is, reaching to the Very Inward Essence of the Things perceived. And therefore it must of Necessity proceed from the Active Power of the Mind it self, exerting its own Intelligible Ideas upon that which is Passively perceived, and so comprehending it by something of its own that is Native and Domestick to it. So that besides the <sup>a</sup> *Sensations* or <sup>b</sup> *Phantasms*, the Sensible Ideas of Corporeal Things passively impressed upon us from without, there must be also <sup>c</sup> *Conceptions*, or Intelligible Ideas of them Actively Exerted from the Mind it self; or otherwise they could never be Understood.

3. WHEREFORE, that we may the better illustrate this Busines, let us suppose some Individual Body; as for Example, a White

<sup>a</sup> Αισθήματα.

<sup>b</sup> Φαντάσματα.

<sup>c</sup> Νοήματα.

or Black Triangular Superficies, or a Solid <sup>4</sup> Four-Square included all within a Triangular Superficies, exposed first to the View of Sense or a Living Eye; and then afterward considered by the Intellect, that we may see the Difference betwixt the Passive Perception of it by Sense, and the Active Comprehension of it by the Understanding. Now Sense, that is a Living Eye or Mirror, as soon as ever it is Converted toward this Object, will here Passively perceive an Appearance of an Individual Thing, as existing without it, White and Triangular, without any Distinction Concretely and Confusedly together; and it will perceive no more than this, though it dwell never so long upon this Object; for it perceives no more than is impressed upon it; and here the Passion of Sense ends and goes no further. But the Mind or Intellect residing in the same Soul that hath a Power of Sensation also, then beginning to make a Judgment upon that which is thus Passively perceived, Exerts its own Innate Vigour and Activity, and displays it self gradually after this manner. For, *First*, with its subtle Divisive Power, it will Analyse and resolve this Con-

<sup>4</sup> Tetrahedrum.

crete Phantasmatical <sup>e</sup> Whole, and take Notice of several distinct Intellectual Objects in it. For Considering that every White or Black Thing is not necessarily Triangular, nor every Triangular Thing White or Black, it finds here two distinct Intellectual Objects; the one White, the other Triangular: And then again, because that which is Nothing can have no Affections, it concludes, that here is something as a Common <sup>f</sup> Subject to both these Affections or Modifications, which it calls a Corporeal Substance; which being one and the same Thing, is here both White and Triangular. Wherefore it finds at least three distinct Objects of Intellectual Cogitation, Corporeal Substance, White, and Triangular, all Individual. But then reflecting again upon these several Objects, and that it may further enquire into the Natures and Essences of them, it now bids adieu to Sense and Singularity; and taking an higher Flight, considers them all Universally and abstractly from Individuating Circumstances and Matter. That is, it no more seeks the Knowledge and Comprehension of these Things without it self, from whence it hath already passively per-

<sup>e</sup> Totum. <sup>f</sup> Substratum.

ceived them by Sense; but revolving within it self upon its own Inward Notions and Active Anticipations (which must needs be universal) it looks for some Domestick Ideas of its own to understand these General Natures by, that so from thence with a Descending View it may comprehend under them those Invididuals that now affect the Sense.

4. FIRST therefore, for Corporeal Substance in general, which is the <sup>g</sup> *Subject* both of Colour and Figure, not to pursue any long and tedious ProcesSES, it quickly concludes the Essence of it to be this; A Thing Extended Impenetrably, or which hath impenetrable Longitude, Latitude and Profundity: And because it is not here Considered meerly as a Notion or Objective Cogitation, but as a Thing actually existing without the Mind, therefore it exerts another <sup>h</sup> *Notion* of Existence or Singularity also; which added to the former, makes it up a Thing that hath Impenetrable Extension Existing. Now none of these Ideas, neither of Essence nor Existence, nor Thing, nor Substance, nor Something nor Nothing, nor Impenetrability nor Extension, nor Longitude, Latitude and Profundity,

<sup>g</sup> Substratum.

<sup>h</sup> Ratio.

were Impressed or stamped upon the Mind, either from this Individual, or any other sensible Object; for they can be neither seen nor perceived by any Corporeal Sense; but are merely excited from the Innate Activity of the Mind it self, that same Power by which the Mind is enabled to Conceive of <sup>i</sup> *Nothing* as well as <sup>k</sup> *Something*; And certain it is that the Idea of *Nothing* was never impressed from any Thing. And if the Essence of Body, or Corporeal Substance it self, be only comprehended and understood by the Active Ideas of the Mind, (for Sense here perceived no such Thing, but only was affected from the Exteriour Induments thereof, Colour and Figure) then the several Modes of it, such as Whiteness and Triangularity, which are but certain Modes of an Extended Substance, must needs be Understood in like manner, not by Passive Ideas and Phantasms, but the Noematical or Intelligible Ideas of the Mind.

5. WHEREFORE in the next place, as for White Colour or Whiteness, here is a Plain and Palpable Difference betwixt Sense and Intuition; betwixt the <sup>i</sup> *Phantasm* and <sup>m</sup> *Con-*

<sup>i</sup> *Nihil.*      <sup>k</sup> *Aliiquid.*  
<sup>l</sup> *Φάντασμα.*      <sup>m</sup> *Natura.*

ception, betwixt a Sensible and Intelligible Idea; For the Sense or Phantasm of White, that we have from the Individual Object, is no clear Comprehension of any Essence or Intelligible <sup>a</sup>Notion; but only a Passion or Affection in the Soul, Caused by some Local Motions communicated to the Brain from the Object without, that is, a Drowsy, Confused and imperfect Perceptive Cogitation; But now the awakened Mind or Intellect revolving its own Inward Ideas, and being not able to Comprehend any such Mode or Quality in extended Substance, as this Sensible Idea of White is, formally considered; for this very Reason, boldly and confidently concludes that this is no Real Quality in that Body it self absolutely considered, because no such Thing is Intelligible by it; in which Opinion, it is confirmed by Sense it self, in that the lower Ends of the Rainbow that reach to the Earth do not Stain or Dye any Thing with the several Colours of it; and that the same Drops of Dew or Rain to Eyes at several Distances, have all those several Colours of the Rainbow in them, and none at all: And by other Experiments it appears that these Things are only Passions or Affections in the Sentient it self,

<sup>a</sup> Ratio.

O 3

Caused

198 *Concerning Eternal and*

Caused by some Peculiar Modification of the Superficies of that Material Object in respect of the Figure, Site and Disposition of its Insensible Parts, whereby the Light or Intermediate <sup>o</sup> *Globulous Particles*, are in a Peculiar manner reflected upon the Eye, and that probably the Difference betwixt a White and a Black Object consists in this, that in one the small Particles are Polite and Solid, and therefore vividly reflect the Lighter <sup>p</sup> *Globulous Particles*; but in the other being differently disposed, the Light, as a Ball flung against an Heap of Sand, is not so smartly reflected from it, but as it were sinks into it, and its Motion is stifled and smothered in the Caverns of it. Wherefore the Intelligible Idea of a White Colour is this, that it is a certain Passion or Sense in the Soul, Caused by a Peculiar Modification of the Object without, in respect of the Disposition of its insensible Parts, whereby the Light or <sup>q</sup> *Globulous Particles* are more smartly and vividly reflected upon the Eye; Which is another kind of Comprehension of it, than the Sensible Idea or Phantasm of White is, which is no Intelligible Idea, but a Cogita-

<sup>o</sup> Globuli. <sup>p</sup> Globuli. <sup>q</sup> Globuli.

tive

tive Passion ; that is, another Species of Cognition, or an half awakened Perception. Neither are these Intelligible Ideas of Passion and Sense Impressed upon the Soul from the Sensible Objects without ; for the Eye sees neither Passion nor Sense, but they are actively exerted from the Mind it self, and therefore Mastered and Conquered, and Comprehended by it.

6. I now proceed to the last Intellectual Object Comprehended in this Individual Body, which is Triangularity, or some one Particular Species of a Triangle ; as for Example, an Equilateral, or a Rectangular Triangle ; For there can be no Individual Triangle but must be of one Determinate Species or another.

Now because the Phantasm of such a Triangle doth not only bear a Resemblance of the Outward Material Object, which the Phantasms of Colours and the like do not, but also of the True Intelligible Idea of a Triangle it self ; and because when Men think never so abstractly and Mathematically of a Triangle, they have Commonly some rude Phantasm or Picture of it before them in their Imagination, Therefore many confidently perswade themselves, that there is no other Idea of a Triangle or other Figure, be-

sive the bare Phantasm or Sensible Idea impressed upon the Soul from some Individual Object without; that is, No active Noematic Idea inwardly exerted from the Mind it self. Which indeed is all one as to say, that there is no Intellection or Knowledge of a Triangle at all; for as much as neither Sense nor Fancy, which are but Superficial, imperfect and Incomplete Perceptive Cogitations, reach to the Comprehension of the *Notion* or Essence of any Thing. Wherefore now to make the Contrary appear, we will again view this Material Triangle, or *Four-Square* before our Eyes, making a nearer Approach to it; and upon this second Contemplation of it, we plainly observe much Inequality in the Superficies, Unevenness and Inequality in the Lines, and Bluntness in the Angles. From whence it evidently appears that that Idea that we had in our Minds of a Perfect Triangle, as a Plain Superficies terminated by three straight Lines joyned together in three Angles, ending in so many Points, was not impressed upon our Soul from this Individual Object, it being different from it, and far more Exact and Perfect than that is. And there-

\* Ratio.      \* Tetrabedrum.

fore

fore it must needs be granted that it was but occasionally or accidentally invited and drawn forth from the Mind, upon the Sight of it, just in the same manner as when a Man looks upon Certain Lines drawn with Ink upon a piece of Paper something resembling the Face of a Man, his Mind doth not fix and stay it self in the Consideration of those Inky Lines; but presently upon this occasion excites within it self the Idea of a Man's Face. Or when a Man walking in a Gallery where there are divers Pictures hung upon the Wall, chances amongst them to espy the Picture of a Friend or Acquaintance of his, which, though perhaps far from an exact Resemblance, yet notwithstanding makes him presently to excite the Idea of his Friend in his Imagination. Neither of which Things could possibly be, if there had not been a Previous and præ-existent Idea of a Man's Face, or such a Certain Friend in his Mind before; for otherwise a Man in this Case could think of nothing but just that that was impressed upon him by Sense, The Figures of those Inky Delineations, and those several Strokes and Shadows of the Pictures. In like manner, when we look upon the Rude, Imperfect and Irregular Figures of some Corporeal Things, the Mind upon

upon this Occasion excites from within it self the Ideas of a Perfect Triangle, Square, Circle, Pyramid, Cube, Sphere, and the like, Whose Essences are so indivisible, that they are not Capable of the least Additions, Detraction or Variation without the Destruction of them, because there was some Rude and Bungling Resemblance of these Regular Figures in those Material Objects that we look upon, of which probably the Maker had the Ideas in his Mind. And the Mind Naturally delights more to think of Simple and Regular, than of Compounded and Irregular Figures.

7. **B**UT if any one should here object and say, that it doth not follow from hence, that that more Perfect Idea which Now I have of a Triangle in my Mind, the Accuracy whereof this present Visible Idea before my Eyes doth not reach unto, was actively excited from the Mind it self; because it might be some time formerly impressed, from some other Individual Triangle which I had elsewhere seen; just in the same manner as when I looked upon a Picture, that Idea of a Man's Face in general, or of that particular Friend, that was occasionally excited thereby, was not any Innate Idea, or an Idea that sprung wholly

wholly from the Activity of the Mind, but was formerly impressed upon the Soul, from Individual Sensible Objects now remembered or called to Mind: I say, that this cannot possibly be true, because there never was any Material or Sensible straight Line, Triangle, Circle, that we saw in all our Lives, that was Mathematically exact, but even Sense it self, at least by the Help of Microscopes, might plainly discover much Unevenness, Ruggedness, Flexuosity, Angulosity, Irregularity and Deformity in them, as will appear to any one that shall make a Triangle upon the most accurate Lines that the Wit or Art of Man can make; and therefore no Material Line could stamp or Impress upon the Soul in a meer Passive Way those exact Ideas that we now have of a Triangle or of a straight Line, which is the shortest possible between two Points, or a Circle that is every where Equidistant from an Individual Center, &c. And if it should be again replied, that notwithstanding there being many such Lines and Circles as Common Sense cannot discern the least Irregularity in them, howsoever they would be in the mean time really irregular to a Perfect and *Lyncean* Sight; yet, according to their Appearance, might

might impress those Ideas that we have of a straight Line or Circle; I answer, that this cannot be neither, there being a Vast Difference betwixt the Confused Indistinction of Sense and Fancy, by reason of their Bluntness and Imperfection, and the Express Accuracy, Preciseness and Indivisibility of those Intelligible Ideas that we have of a straight Line, Circle, Triangle, <sup>†</sup> *Four-Square*, and other Geometrical Figures; and therefore that imperfect, Confused Indistinction of Sense, could never impress any such accurate Ideas upon the Mind, but only occasion the Mind Actively to exert them from within it self.

8. NAY, though it should be granted, that there were Material Lines Mathematically Exact, Perfect Triangles, Squares, Pyramids, Cubes, Spheres, and the like, such as Geometry supposes, as no doubt but the Divine Power can make such in fitting Matter; yet Sense could not at all reach to the discerning of the Mathematical Accuracy of these Things, no more than it doth to the Absolute Equality of any Quantities; as of Lines, Superficies, Bodies, Angles, which is

<sup>†</sup> *Tetrahedrum.*

found and determined only by the Understanding, in that <sup>“</sup> *Intelligible Matter* which Geometry is conversant about. So that Sense could not be able to determine, what Triangle and what <sup>x</sup> *Four-Square* was Mathematically exact, and what not. From whence it is demonstrably Evident, that neither the <sup>y</sup> *Notion* of Perfect Equality, nor the Perfect Mathematical Ideas of Figures, Triangle, Square, Circle, Pyramid, Cube, Sphere, &c. were impressed upon the Soul from without by Sense; Sense not at all reaching to the Discernment of them.

9. B U T, *Lastly*, if there were Material Lines, Triangles, Pyramids, perfectly and Mechanically Exact; yet that which made them such, and thereby to differ from other Irregular Lines, imperfect Triangles and Cubes, could be nothing else but a Conformity to an antecedent Intellectual Idea in the Mind, as the Rule and Exemplar of them; for Otherwise an Irregular Line and an Imperfect Triangle, Pyramid, Cube, are as perfectly that that they are, as the other is; only they are not agreeable to those anticipated and pre-conceived Ideas of Regular Lines and Figures actively

2

<sup>“</sup> *Materia Intelligibilis.*

<sup>x</sup> *Tetrahedrum.*      <sup>y</sup> *Ratio.*

exerted

exerted in the Mind or Intellect, which the Mind Naturally formeth to it self, and delighteth to Exercise it self upon them, as the Proper Object of Art and Science, which the other Irregular Figures are not. Wherefore whenever a Man looking upon Material Objects judges of the Figures of them, and says this is a straight Line, this is a Perfect Triangle, that a Perfect Circle, but those are neither Perfect Triangles nor Circles; it is plain that here are two several Ideas of these Lines and Figures; The one outwardly impressed from those Individual Material Objects from without upon the Sense of the Beholder; the other Actively Exerted from his Inward Mind or Intellect. Which Latter busy Anticipation of it is the Rule, Pattern and Exemplar, whereby he judges of those Sensible Ideas or Phantasms. For otherwise, if there were no inward Anticipations or Mental Ideas, the Spectator would not judge at all, but only Suffer; and every Irregular and Imperfect Triangle being as perfectly that which it is, as the most perfect Triangle, the Mind now having no inward Pattern of its own before it, to distinguish and put a Difference, would not say one of them was more imperfect than another; but only comparing them with one

another, would say that this Individual Figure was not perfectly like to that; upon which Account the Perfect Triangle would be as Imperfectly the Imperfect Triangle, as the Imperfect was the Perfect.

10. WHEREFORE, as I said before, this is just in the same Manner, as when a Man looks upon the Picture of an absent Friend or Familiar Acquaintance, and presently judges of it, he hath plainly two several Ideas in his Mind at the same Time; One Outwardly impressed from the present Picture, the other Pre-existent in his Mind before; by one of which, as the Pattern or Exemplar, he makes a Judgment upon the other, and finds many Faults in it; saving, that here both the Ideas were Foreign and adventitious, the Pre-existent Idea having been some time formerly impressed from an outward Material Object, and thence retained in the Memory or Fancy; but in the other Case, when a Man looking upon a Material Triangle, Square, Circle, Cube, Sphere, in which there are some palpable Irregularities; which he judges of by comparing them with some inward pre-existent Ideas that he hath in his Mind of a perfect Individual Triangle, Square, Circle, Cube; and also conceives some Dislike

like and Displeasure at the Disconformity of the one to the other : The Pre-existent Ideas here were no foreign or adventitious Things, but native and domestick to him, nor at any Time formerly passively received from any Material Objects without, but actively exerted from the Mind it self. And I think there is no doubt to be made but if a perfect adult Man, that was immediately framed out of the Earth, having a newly Created Soul infused, as the *Protoplasm* had, should look upon two several Kinds of Objects at the same time, whereof one was a Perfect Circle or Sphere, Equilateral Triangle, <sup>2</sup> *Four-Square*, Square or Cube ; the other having some Resemblances of the same, had notwithstanding apparent Irregularity in some Parts of them ; but that at first Sight, he would be more pleased with the one than with the other ; which could not be, unless he had some Native or Active Idea of his own within himself, to compare them both with, to which one was more conformable than the other. For there could be no such Thing as Pulcritude and Deformity in Material Objects, if there were no Active Power in the Soul of Framing

<sup>2</sup> *Tetrahedrum.*

Ideas of Regular, Proportionate and Symmetrical Figures within it self, by which it might put a Difference between outward Objects, and make a Judgement of them; but that it only received Stamps and Impressions from without, for then it must needs be equally or indifferently affected with all alike, and not more pleased or displeased with one than with another. Now the Judgement that Men have of Pulchritude and Deformity in Sensible Things, is not meerly Artificial, from Institution or Instruction, or of taught Things, but such as Springs originally from Nature it self.

11. **B**UT that there is an Intelligible Idea of a Triangle inwardly exerted from the Mind it self, distinct from the Phantasm or Sensible Idea that is outwardly impressed from the Material Object, will yet further appear from that which follows; for the Mind reflecting further upon that Idea which it hath of a Triangle, considers first the Generical Nature of it, that it is a Plain Figure, and that a Plain Figure is the Termination of a Plain Superficies; which Superficies is nothing else but meer Latitude without Profundity: For plain Figures are no otherwise conceived by Geometricians. Now it is certain that this Idea of

a Superficies, which Geometricians have, was never imprinted upon their Minds by Sense from any Material Objects; there being no such Thing any where existing without the Mind, as Latitude without Profundity. And therefore it must needs arise from the Activity of the Mind it self. And the Idea of a Plain Superficies, that is, such a Superficies as to all whose Parts a straight Line may be accommodated, as well as the Idea of a straight Line, must needs be actively excited from the Mind also. Again, it Considers the Difference betwixt a Triangle and other Plain Figures, that it is included in and Terminated by three straight Lines joined together in three Points; which Straight Lines being the Extremities of a Superficies, are meer Longitude without either Profundity or Latitude; and which Points being the Extremities of those Lines, have neither Longitude, Latitude nor Profundity in them. Which Mathematical Ideas, in like manner, of a Line without Latitude and Profundity, and a Point without Longitude, Latitude and Profundity, were never impressed upon *Euclid*, or any other Geometrician from without, as is evident without further Proof. Moreover, this Intelligible Idea of a Triangle, as it includes some Numerical

metrical Considerations in it, which Sense hath no Idea of, perceiving only *One* and *One* and *One*; so therein Sides and Angles are relatively considered also to one another; Nay, the very Notion of an Angle, and the Quantity thereof, is a Relative Thing, as *Proclus* hath observed, and therefore not impressed by Sense.

AGAIN, the Mind considering the Idea of its own, as it can find out the several Properties of a Triangle by meer Cogitation, without any Thing of Sense; as that the Greater Side always Subtends the Greater Angle, nay, and that the three Angles are always equal to two Right Angles (as we shall shew afterwards) so it also, by its own Strength, is able to find out all the Species that are Possible in a Plain Triangle, in respect of the Differences both of Sides and Angles. As in respect of the Sides, that it is either *Aequilateral* or <sup>a</sup> *Even-legged*, or <sup>b</sup> *Having Unequal Sides*; of the Angles, that it is a <sup>c</sup> *Straight Cornered*, or <sup>d</sup> *Blunt Cornered*, or <sup>e</sup> *Sharp Cornered Triangle*, and that there can be no Individual Triangle but must of Necessity belong to one of the three Species of either Sort. So that

<sup>a</sup> *Isoceles.*      <sup>b</sup> *Scalenum.*      <sup>c</sup> *Rectangulum.*

<sup>d</sup> *Amblygonium.*      <sup>e</sup> *Oxygonum.*

this is not gathered from Sense, but exerted from the Active Power of the Mind.

12. THE Mind can clearly understand a Triangle in General, without determining its Thought to any particular Species, and yet there can be no Distinct Phantasm of any such Thing; for Every distinct Phantasm or Sensible Picture of a Triangle must of Necessity be either Equilateral or Equicrural, or Inequilateral, <sup>f</sup> *Uneven-legged*. And so as we can in like manner clearly understand in our Minds, <sup>g</sup> *a Thing with a Thousand Corners*, or <sup>h</sup> *One with Ten thousand Corners*, though we cannot possibly have a distinct Phantasm of either of them. But for those Particular Species of Triangles which we may have Distinct Phantasms of, this doth not at all hinder but that we have, notwithstanding, Intelligible Ideas of the same besides, actively exerted from the Mind it self. And so there is a <sup>i</sup> *Phantasm* and a <sup>k</sup> *Conception* at the same time Concurring together, an Active and a Passive Cogitation. The <sup>l</sup> *Conception* or Intelligible Idea being as it were Embodied in the Phantasm, which alone in it self is but

<sup>f</sup> Scalenum. <sup>g</sup> Chiliogonum. <sup>h</sup> Myriogonum.  
<sup>i</sup> Φαντασμα. <sup>k</sup> Νοημα. <sup>l</sup> Νοημα,

an Incomplete Perceptive Cogitation of the Soul half awakened, and doth not comprehend the Indivisible and Immutable <sup>m</sup> Notion or Essence of any Thing.

WHICH Thing to those that cannot better Understand it by what we have already declared, might be illustrated in this manner; When an Astronomer, thinking of the Sun, demonstrates that it is 160 times bigger than the Globe of the Earth, he hath all the while a Phantasm or Imagination of the Sun in his Mind, but as <sup>n</sup> a Circle of a Foot Diameter; nay, he cannot for his Life have a true Phantasm of any such Magnitude which contains the Bigness of the Earth so many times, nor indeed Fancy the Earth an hundredth Part so big as it is. Now, as the Astronomer hath an Intelligible Idea of the Magnitude of the Sun very different from the Phantasm of the same, so in like manner have we Intelligible Ideas of Corporeal Things, when we understand them, besides the Phantasms of them. The Phantasm being as it were <sup>o</sup> the *Craffer Indument*, or Corporeal Vehicle of the <sup>p</sup> Intelligible Idea of the Mind.

<sup>m</sup> Ratio. <sup>n</sup> οὐτπερ πεδάις.

<sup>o</sup> Involutrum. <sup>p</sup> Νόημα.

13. HITHERTO, by the Instance of an Individual and Material Triangle, we have shewed, how the Soul, in Understanding Corporeal Things, doth not meerly suffer from without from the Body, but Actively Exert Intelligible Ideas of its own, and from within it self. Now I observe that it is so far from being true, that all our Objective Cogitations or Ideas are Corporeal Effluxes or Radiations from Corporeal Things without, or impressed upon the Soul from them in a gross Corporeal Manner, as a Signature or Stamp is imprinted by a Seal upon a piece of Wax or Clay; that (as I have before hinted) this is not true sometimes of the Sensible Ideas themselves. For all Perception whatsoever is a Vital Energy, and not a Meer Dead Passion; and as the Atomical Philosophy instructs us, there is nothing Communicated in Sensation from the Material Objects without, but only Certain Local Motions, that are propagated from them by the Nerves into the Brain; which Motions cannot propagate themselves Corporeally upon the Soul also, because it penetrates and runs through all the Parts of its own Body. But the Soul, by reason of that Vital and Magical Union which is between it and the Body, sympathizing with the several

Motions

Motions of it in the Brain, doth thereupon exert Sensible Ideas or Phantasms within it self, whereby it perceives or takes Notice of Objects Distant from the Brain, either within or without the Body. Many of which Sentiments and Phantasms have no Similitude at all, either with those Local Motions made in the Brain, or with the Objects without; such as are the Sentiments of Pain, Pleasure, and Titillation, Hunger, Thirst, Heat and Cold, Sweet and Bitter, Light and Colours, &c. Wherefore the Truth is, that Sense, if we well consider it, is but a kind of <sup>4</sup> Speech, (if I may so call it) Nature as it were talking to us in the Sensible Objects Without, by certain Motions as Signs from thence Communicated to the Brain. For, as in Speech, when Men talk to one another, they do but make Certain Motions upon the Air, which cannot Impress their Thoughts upon one another in a Passive manner; but it being first consented to and agreed upon, that such certain Sounds shall signify such Ideas and Cogitations, he that hears those Sounds in Discourse, doth not fix his Thoughts upon the Sounds themselves, but presently Exerts from within him-

<sup>3</sup> Loquela.

216 *Concerning Eternal and*

self such Ideas and Cogitations as those Sounds by Consent signify, though there be no Similitude at all betwixt those Sounds and Thoughts. Just in the same manner Nature doth as it were talk to us in the Outward Objects of Sense, and import Various Sentiments, Ideas, Phantasms, and Cogitations, not by stamping or impressing them passively upon the Soul from without, but only by certain Local Motions from them, as it were dumb Signs made in the Brain ; It having been first Constituted and Appointed by Nature's Law, that such Local Motions shall signify such Sensible Ideas and Phantasms, though there be no Similitude at all betwixt them ; for what Similitude can there be betwixt any Local Motions and the Senses of Pain or Hunger, and the like, as there is no Similitude betwixt many Words and Sounds, and the Thoughts which they signify. But the Soul, as by a certain secret Instinct, *and as it were by Compact*, understanding Nature's Language, as soon as these Local Motions are made in the Brain, doth not fix its Attention immediately upon those Motions themselves, as we do not use to do in Discourse upon meer Sounds, but presently

Et tanquam ex compacto.

exerts such Sensible Ideas, Phantasms and Cogitations, as Nature hath made them to be Signs of, whereby it perceives and takes Cognizance of many other Things both in its own Body, and without it, at a Distance from it, In order to the Good and Conservation of it. Wherefore there are two kinds of Perceptive Powers in the Soul, one below another; The first is that which belongs to the Inferior Part of the Soul, whereby it sympathizes with the Body, which is determined by the several Motions and Pressures that are made upon that from Corporeal Things without to several Sensitive and Phantastical Energies, whereby it hath a Slight and Superficial Perception of Individual Corporeal Things, and as it were of the Outsides of them, but doth not reach to the Comprehension of the Essence or Indivisible and Immutable <sup>8</sup>Notion of any thing. - The Second Perceptive Power is that of the Soul it self, or that Superior, Interior Noetical Part of it which is <sup>1</sup>free from *Passion* or *Sympathy*, free and disentangled from all that Magical Sympathy with the Body. Which acting alone by it self, Exerts from within the In-

Ratio.

<sup>1</sup>Αταρίς, άσυνταρίς.

tellible

*lumen secum of Bacon*

telligible Ideas of Things, Virtually Contained in its own Cognoscitive Power, that are Universal and Abstract <sup>u</sup> *Notions*, from which, <sup>x</sup> *as it were looking downward* it comprehends Individual Things. Now because these latter, which are pure Active Energies of the Soul, are many times exerted upon occasion of those other Passive or Sympathetical Perceptions of Individual Things anteceding; it is therefore conceived by many, that they are nothing else but thin and Evanid Images of those Sensible Ideas, and therefore that all Intellection and Knowledge ascends from Sense, and Intellection is nothing but the Improvement or Result of Sense. Yet notwithstanding it is most certainly true, that they proceed from a quite different Power of the Soul, whereby it actively protrudes its own Immediate Objects from within it self, and Comprehends Individuals without it, not Passively or consequentially, but as it were Proleptically, and not with an Ascending, but with a Descending Perception; whereby the Mind first reflecting upon it self, and its own Ideas, virtually contained in its own Omnipotent Cognoscitive Power, and thence de-

<sup>u</sup> *Rationes.*<sup>x</sup> *Tanquam desuper spectans.*

scending downward, comprehends Individual Things under them. So that Knowledge doth not begin in Individuals, but end in them. And therefore they are but the Secondary Objects of Intellection, the Soul taking its first Rise from within it self, and so by its own inward Cognoscitive Power comprehending Things without it. Else how should God have Knowledge? And if we know as God knows, then do we know or gain Knowledge by Universals. In which Sense (though not in that other of *Protagoras*) the Soul may be truly said to be the Measure of all Things.

Now I say, if the very Sensible Ideas and Phantasms themselves, be not meer Stamps or Impressions from Individual Things without in a Corporeal Manner impressed upon the Soul, but Active, though Sympathetical Energies of the Soul it self: It is much more impossible that the Universal and abstract Intelligible Ideas of the Mind, or Essences of Things, should be meer Stamps or Signatures impressed upon the Soul, as upon a Dead Thing in a gross Corporeal manner.

14. WHEREFORE here is a Double Error committed by Vulgar Philosophers; *First*, That they make the Sensible Ideas and Phantasms to be totally impressed from without in

a gross corporeal Manner upon the Soul, as it were upon a dead Thing; and, *Secondly*, That then they suppose the Intelligible Ideas, the Abstract and Universal Notions of the Mind, to be made out of these Sensible Ideas and Phantasms thus impressed from without in a Corporeal Manner likewise by Abstraction or Separation of the Individuating Circumstances, as it were by the hewing off certain Chips from them, or by hammering, beating or anvelling of them out into thin Intelligible Ideas; as if Solid and Massy Gold should be beaten out into thin Leaf-Gold. To which Purpose they have ingeniously contrived and set up an <sup>y</sup> *Active Understanding*, like a Smith or Carpenter, with his Shop or Forge in the Brain, furnished with all necessary Tools and Instruments for such a Work. Where I would only demand of these Philosophers, Whether this their so expert <sup>z</sup> *Smith* or Architect, <sup>a</sup> the *Active Understanding*, when he goes about his Work, doth know what he is to do with these Phantasms before hand, what he is to make of them, and unto what Shape to bring them? If he do not, he must needs

<sup>y</sup> *Intellectus Agens.*

<sup>z</sup> *Faber.*      <sup>a</sup> *Intellectus Agens.*

be a bungling Workman; but if he do, he is prevented in his Design and Undertaking, his Work being done already to his Hand; for he must needs have the Intelligible Idea of that which he knows or Understands already within himself; and therefore now to what Purpose should he use his Tools, and go about to hew and hammer and anvil out these Phantasms into thin and subtle Intelligible Ideas, meerly to make that which he hath already, and which was Native and Domestick to him?

BUT this Opinion is founded in no less a Mistake of Aristotle's Text concerning the <sup>b</sup> *Active Understanding*, who never dreamt of any such as these Men imagine, if we may believe the Greek Scholia, that best understood him; than it is of the Text of Nature; as if not only those Phantasms, but also the Intelligible Ideas themselves, were gross and corporeal Things impressed from Matter; whereas even the first of these are Passive Energies of the Soul it self, fatally united to some Local Motions in the Body, and Concurrently produced with them, by reason of that Magical Union betwixt the

<sup>b</sup> *Intellectus Agens.*

Soul and Body; but the other are the Pure Active Energies of the Mind it self, as free from Corporeal Sympathy. Neither can these Latter be made out of the Former by any Abstraction or Separation, nor nor by any Depinxtion or Chymical Distillation or Sublimation neither; for it is a Thing utterly impossible that Vigour, Activity and awakened Energy, as Intellections are, should be raised out of Dull, Sluggish and Drowsy Passion or Sympathy. And this Opinion is but like that other of the same Philosopher's, Concerning the Eduction or Raising of Substantial and Immaterial Forms out of the Passive Matter, Both of them proceeding from one and the same Sottishness of Mind that induces them to think that Dull, Stupid and Senseless Matter, is the first Original Source of all Activity and Perfection, all Form and Pulchritude, all Wisdom and Knowledge in the World.

AND Things being rightly considered, this Opinion doth in Truth and Reality, attribute as much Activity to the Soul, that saith it hath a Power of raising or educating of Intelligible Ideas or Universal and Abstract <sup>c</sup> Notions out of Phantasms, as that other that af-

<sup>c</sup> Rationes.

firms it hath a Power of exerting them from it self; as it would attribute as much Activity to the Sun to say that he had a Power of raising or educating Light or the Day out of Night and Darkness, as to say that he had a Power of exerting it out of his own Body.

15. WHEREFORE others of this Kind of Philosophers, that will not acknowledge any Immaterial Substance, that hath any Active Power of its own in it, or any thing in the Soul besides Impression from Corporeal Objects Without, Have found out another Device, and that is this, Plainly to deny that there are any Universal Notions, Ideas or *Reasons* in the Mind at all; But that those Things which are called Universal, are nothing else but Names applied to several Individuals. Which Opinion, as it was formerly held by those that were therefore called *Nominalists*; so it hath been lately revived and taken up by some of these Strenuous Impugners of Immaterial and Incorporeal Substances. *There is nothing in the World* (faith a late Author) Universal, but Names; for the Things Named are Every one of them Individual and Singular. Now indeed this

\* Rationes. \* Nominales.

is true, and no Body denies it, of Things existing without the Mind; but this Author's Meaning herein is to deny all Universal <sup>f</sup> Conceptions and <sup>g</sup> Reasonings of the Mind, as appears by his larger Explication of the same Opinion elsewhere. <sup>h</sup> This Universal is the Name, not of any Thing Existing in the Nature of Things, nor of any Idea or Phantasm formed in the Mind, but always the Name of some Word or Name; so that when an Animal or a Stone, or a Spectre, or any thing else is said to be Universal, it is to be understood only that those Words Animal, Stone, are universal Names, that is, Names Common to more Things; and the Conceptions answering to them in the Mind, are the Images and Phantasms of Singular Ani-

—<sup>f</sup> Conceptus.    <sup>g</sup> Rationes.

<sup>h</sup> Est Nomen hoc Universale non Rei Alicujus Existens in Rerum Naturâ, neque Ideæ sive Phantasmatis alicujus in Animo formati, sed alicujus semper Vocis sive Nominis Nomen, ita ut cum dicatur Animal vel Saxum, vel Spectrum, vel aliud quicquam esse Universale, intelligendum sit tantum voces eas Animal, Saxum, esse Nomina Universalia, id est Nomina pluribus rebus communia, & respondentes ipsis in animo Conceptus sunt singularium Animalium vel aliarum rerum Imagines & Phantasmata. Ideoque non est opus ad vim Universalis Intelligendam aliâ facultate quam Imaginativâ, quâ recordamur voces ejusmodi modo unam rem, modo aliam in animo excitâsse. Elect. Philof.

mals

maſs or other Things. And therefore to understand the Meaning of an Universal, there is no need of any other Faculty than that of the Imagination, whereby we are minded that Words of that ſort have ſometimes excited one Thing, ſometimes another in our Mind. That is, there are no other Ideas in the Mind but only Phantasms of Individual Corporeal Things: Only there are Universal Names, which are applied in Common to more Individuals than one; but there is no other Object of the Mind or Cogitation but only Singular and Individual Things existing without the Soul. Wherefore this Author Conſtantely hereunto defines Understanding to be nothing else but Conception Caufed by Speech; and therefore if Speech be peculiар to Man, then is Understanding Peculiар to him alſo. This Mysterious Notion is inſisted upon and explained likewiſe by the Third Objecor againſt Cartefius's Metaphyficks, after this Manner. Now what do we ſay, if

Q

perhaps

Quid jam dicimus ſi forte Ratiocinatio nihil aliud ſit quam Copulatio & Concatenatio Nominum live Appellationum per Verbum hoc Eſt. Unde Colligitus Ratione nihil omnino de Naturâ rerum ſed de eorum appellationibus, hincimur utrum copulemus rerum nomina ſecundum pacta vel non. Si hoc ſit, ſicut eſſe potest, Ratiocinatio depen-  
debit

*perhaps Reasoning be nothing else but the Coupling and Chaining together of Names or Appellations, by these Words, It Is. Whence we gather nothing at all by Reason concerning the Nature of Things, but concerning their Appellations; to wit, whether we Joyn the Names of Things according to Agreements or not. If this be so, as it may be, Reasoning will depend upon Names, Names upon the Imagination, and the Imagination upon the Motion of the Bodily Organs; and so the Mind will be nothing else but a Motion in some Parts of the Body. According to which Philosophy, Reason and Science do not superadd any Thing to Sense, or reach any further in the Knowledge of the Nature of Things, but only in making use of Common Names to express several Individuals by at once.* (To add to this?)

16. **W H E R E F O R E**, although there be already enough said to prove, that in the Understanding of Individual Corporeal Things, beside Sense and the Sensible Phantasms from them, there are also Intelligible Ideas and  
debit à Nominibus, Nomina ab Imaginatione, & Imagination ab Organorum Corporeorum Motu, & sic Mens nihil aliud erit præterquam Motus in partibus quibusdam Corporis Organici.

Universal \* Notions exerted from the Mind it self, by which alone they are Comprehended; yet still to make this Business clearer, and also to demonstrate, that the Knowledge of Universal Axiomatical Truth, and Scientifical Theorems is a Thing which doth not passively Result from Sense, but from the Actual Strength and Vigour of the Intellect it self Comprehending its own Intelligible Ideas, we will here Propose that one Geometrical Theorem Concerning a Triangle; That it hath three Angles Equal to two Right Angles; and Consider what the Subject of it is, Scientifically comprehended.

FIRST therefore, if there be no Other Object of the Mind in Knowledge but Sensible Individuals Existing without us, Then the Subject of this Theorem, when *Euclid* wrought it, was only Some Individual Bodies by him Compared together. Nay, *Euclid* himself did not Carry this Knowledge about with him in his Mind, neither was he Master of it any Longer than he held those Individual Bodies in his Hands, or looked upon them with his Eyes; and if so, it could not signify any

\* Rationes.

<sup>1</sup> Επιστημονίας.

thing at all, to any other Person which either then or now had not the same Individual Bodies to compare, that *Euclid* had. Whereas it is plain, that the Subject of this Theorem, whatsoever it be, is such a Thing as Every Geometrician, though in never such distant Places and Times, hath the very same always ready at his Hand, without the least Imaginable Difference. And they all pronounce Concerning the same thing. Which could not possibly otherwise be, unless it were some Universal <sup>m</sup> *Notion* and Intelligible Idea of the Mind.

17. AGAIN, Secondly, No Individual or Material Thing is the Subject of this Theorem, as Sense takes Cognizance of it, that is, the Matter, and Colour, and Figure and Magnitude, all Concretely together. For the same Individual Matter may presently be made Quadrangular or Circular, but only precisely in respect of the Figure; and of that also no otherwise than as it is Conformable to the Indivisible and Immutable <sup>n</sup> *Notion* or Idea of a Triangle, Comprehended in the Mind as the Exemplar of it. Now, as we have shewed already, there is no Material Triangle any

<sup>m</sup> Ratio.

<sup>n</sup> Ratio.

where

where to be found that is Mathematically Exact and Accurate, Neither is the Individual Form of a Material Triangle immutable. And if there were any Mathematically Exact, our Sense could be no <sup>o</sup> Criterion or Rule to Judge of it, nor discern when any thing were Indivisibly such, nor judge of the Absolute and Mathematical Equality of the three Material Angles of it, with two other Angular Superficies. Wherefore the Subjects of this Geometrical Theorem are no Sensible Individual Bodies, but the <sup>p</sup> Notions and <sup>q</sup> Ideæ of the Mind it self, in which alone Mathematical Accuracy is to be found, and the Exact Equality of one Thing to another certainly and infallibly Known.

18. Nay, if we should suppose that there were some Individual Material Triangles and Angles, absolutely and Mathematically Exact; And that our Sense did infallibly perceive the Indivisible Points of them; or that we had an Infallible Pair of Compasses, whose <sup>r</sup> Tops were Mathematical Points, whereby we could Measure the several Angles of the Triangle and Right Angle in a perfect Circle, accu-

<sup>o</sup> Κριτήπειν. <sup>p</sup> Rationes <sup>q</sup> Ideæ.

<sup>r</sup> Cuspides.

rately divided into Infinite Parts ; or else Cutting off those several Angles of the Triangle, and laying them together upon an Absolute Plane, we should thus Mechanically find them Equal to the two Material Right Angles ; This would not amount to the Knowledge of this Truth, that a Triangle, as such, hath of Necessity three Angles equal to two Right Angles ; we thus Considering them only as Material Individuals, and Things Existing without the Mind by Corporeal Sense. For though we had now found that these Individual Material Triangles were Equal to those two Individual Material Right Angles ; yet looking no further than Sense determined to Individuals, we could not tell certainly that it was so with all Individual Triangles, much less Understand any Necessity of its being so, or attain to any thing of the Reason of it, in which alone true Science consisteth. And this Aristotle hath observed very pertinently to our Purpose, *Post. Anal. Lib. I. cap. 25.*

*Neither is it Necessary to understand by Sense, but*

*Οὐδὲ διὰ αἰσθήσεως ἔστιν ἐπίστασθαι, ἀλλὰ αἰσθέσθαι γε. αἰσθάνειν τὸ δὲ πί πεντε καὶ τὸ δὲ καθόλου καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶσιν ἀδιάτετον αἰσθάνειν. οὐ γὰρ τόδε, οὐδὲ τὸν. οὐ γὰρ ἂν καθόλου. Τὸ γὰρ αὐτὸν καὶ πανταχοῦ καθόλου φέμενον ἔνεστι. Ἐπεὶ δὲ αὐτὸς μὲν ἀποδίδεις καθόλου, ταῦτα δὲ*

but to Perceive; but this regards a Particular Thing and Manner, and the Present Time. But it is Impossible to Perceive by Sense what relates to Every Thing, and in all Respects: For This and Now relate not to an Universal; For of an Universal we say, that it is Always and Every Where. Since then Demonstrations are of an Universal, it is Plain that there is no Knowledge of the Universal Theorems of Geometry by Sense. For it is manifest, that if we could Perceive by Sense that the three Angles of a Triangle were Equal to two Right Angles, yet should we not rest satisfied in this, as having therefore a sufficient Knowledge of it (as some say;) but would seek further after a Demonstration hereof: Sense reaching only to Singulars, but Knowledge to Universals. The Mind would not be satisfied herewith, but would still further require a Demonstration of it; which Demonstrations are not of Individuals perceived by Sense, but only of the Universal "Notions comprehended in the

οὐκ ἐσὶν ἀισθέσας, φαντρὸς ὅτι οὐδὲ ἐπιτασσεῖται αἰσθέσας ἐσιν. Ἀλλὰ δῆλον ὅτι καὶ οὐ περ αἰσθέσας ὅτι τὸ τρίγωνον εντὸν ὄρθαις ἵσται ἔχει τὰς γωνίας, εἰςηπούμενος ἀπόδειξιν, Εἰ οὐ (άς φατί τις;) ἐπιτασσεῖται. Ἀισθέσας μὲν γὰρ αἰσθάνη καθ' ἕκαστον, οὐ δὲ ἐπιτημητὰ τοῦ πεδίου γνωρίζειν ἐσιν.

¶ Rationes.

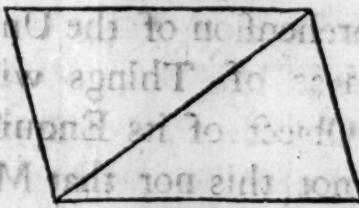
Mind; Knowledge, as I said before, being a Descending Comprehension of a Thing from the Universal Ideas of the Mind, and not an Ascending Perception of them from Individuals by Sense.

19. WHEREFORE the Apodictical Knowledge of this Truth is no otherwise to be attained than by the Mind's ascending above Sense, and Elevating it self from Individuals to the Comprehension of the Universal <sup>x</sup> *Notions* and Ideas of Things within it self, making the Object of its Enquiry and Contemplation, not this nor that Material Individual Triangle without it self, but the Indivisible and Immutable Notion of a Triangle. And thus it finds several Ways that a Triangle, as such, must of Necessity have its three Angles Equal to two Right Angles.

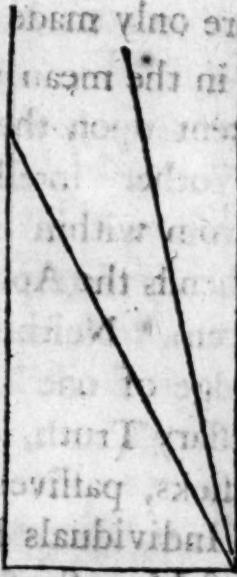
FOR, *First*, if one will Consider any Triangle, as made out of a Parallelogram (though this be the more Compounded Figure) divided by a Diagonal Line into two equal Triangles, it is Plain in every Parallelogram there are four Angles Equal to four Right Angles, because when a straight Line Cuts two Parallel Lines, the two Interiour Angles

<sup>x</sup> *Rationes.*

must of Necessity be Equivalent to two Right Angles, one of them being the Complement of the other to a Semicircle. But when the Parallelogram is divided into two Equal Triangles by a Diagonal Line, the Quantity of the three Angles in each must of Necessity be half the Quantity of the Four Angles in the Parallelogram.



OR, if a Man will Consider the *Formation* of a Plain Triangle in this Manner; *First*, by a straight Line Cutting two Parallel Lines, and then one of these Parallel moving upon its Centre in the Straight Line out of its Parallelism, and inclining towards the other Line, if it move never so little out of its Parallelism towards the other Parallel, *Genesis.* the



And so much as the Interiour Angle, which with the other opposite, made up two Right Angles, so much is the third Angle; and therefore all three make up two Right Angles.

20. Now here is a gross Errour of the Vulgar to imagine, because Geometricians demonstrating such Theorems, Commonly make use of such Sensible Schemes or Diagrams, that therefore the Knowledge of this Truth doth Result from Sense, or that the Geometricians themselves have no other Ideas in their Minds of straight Lines, Parallels,

Right,

Right, Acute and Obtuse Angles, Triangles, Equality of Angles, than what are impressed upon their Fancy from these Schemes. Whereas these are only made use of to entertain the Fancy in the mean time, whilst the Mind being intent upon the Demonstration, actively exerts other intelligible Ideas of these Things from within it self, and from thence Comprehends the Apodictical Necessity of the Theorem. Neither is the true and proper Knowledge of one Theorem or Universal and Necessary Truth, either in Geometry or Metaphysicks, passively impressed upon the Soul from Individuals Existing without, or the Result of Meer Sense, but it proceeds from the Active Strength and Vigour of the Mind, Comprehending the Intelligible Ideas and Universal <sup>2</sup> Notions of Things within it self.

21. WHEREFORE we Conclude, that the Immediate Objects of Geometrical Science, properly so called, are not Individual Bodies or Superficies, but the Intelligible and Universal Ideas of a Triangle, Square, Circle, Pyramid, Cube, Sphere, actively exerted from the Mind, and Comprehended in it.

<sup>2</sup> Rationes.

For

For the Mind doth not seek its Objects of Knowledge abroad without it self, but must needs actively Comprehend them within it self: Which also, as we shall show in the following Chapter, are Immutable Things, and always the same.





B O O K IV.

C H A P. IV.

I.



O Individual Material Thing is always necessarily the same with it self, but Mutable and changeable. And our Sensible Perceptions of them, are nothing but Passions or Affections in the Soul from some Local Motions in our Body caused by them; which Passions also are a Kind of Motions in the Soul, whereby we do not comprehend the Immutable *Ratio* or Essence of any thing. But Intellection and Knowledge are the Active Comprehension of something, that is fixed and Immutable, and hath always a necessary Identity with it self. For that which is not one Steady and Immutable Thing, cannot as

I

such,

238 *Concerning Eternal and*

such, be an Object of Intellection or Knowledge, neither can the Mind fix it self upon it; for it must needs mock and delude the Understanding, perpetually Gliding and Rolling away from it, when it Endeavours to grasp or comprehend it. Neither can it be the Basis or Subject of any Scientifical Theorem or Proposition; For how can any thing be Certainly, constantly and Immutably affirmed of that which is no one certain Thing, nor always Immutably the same with it self. Whence it plainly follows, that the Immediate Objects of Intellection and Knowledge, cannot be these Individual Material Things as such, which our Senses are Passively affected from, but must of Necessity be something else.

2. For which Cause those Flowing Philosophers before-mentioned, *Heraclitus*, *Cratylus*, and *Protagoras*, that maintained, that there were no other Beings that could be the Objects of Cogitation besides these Individual Material Things, which they supposed always to Flow, and never to stand still; did consequently to this Hypothesis of theirs assert; that there was no Knowledge but Sense, and no certain or Immutable Comprehension of any thing. For that this Assertion of theirs

was grounded meerly upon this Hypothesis, that there was no other Being or Object of the Mind, besides Individual Material Things, as such; which they signified after this Manner, by saying, that all Things Flowed, for these Material Things do so; Aristotle plainly instructs us in his Metaphysicks, *Lib. 4. c. 5.*

" The Ground of this Opinion, which denied all certain and Immutable Knowledge, was from hence; because Truth and Knowledge refer to Beings or Entities, and they supposed that there were no other Beings besides these Individual Sensibles only. In which there is very much of Undeterminateness. And which they perceived to be liable to perpetual Motion or Mutation. Now concerning that which always changes, nothing can be affirmed as constantly and immutably true. And from

<sup>2</sup> Λίτιον τούς τύπους ὅτι περὶ τῶν ὄγκων μὲν τὴν ἀλλαγὴν ἔσχε πάντα, τὰ δὲ ὄγκα τούτων τὰ μετρητὰ μέριαν. εὐ δὲ τύπους πολλὰ, οὐδὲ τούτους φύσις ἀντιτίρχεται. Ετι δὲ πάσαν ὄρατην ταῦτην μηκύνει τὸν Φύσιν, κατὰ δὲ τὸ μεταβασίαλλον, ἐδοξασθενεμανεῖται, περιγγεῖ τὸ πάντας πάντη μεταβασίαλλον, ἐκ ἐνδέ χειροῖς ἀλιθεύεται.

Ἐκ γράμματος τοῦ Κρατόλοφου οὐδὲ τὸν εἰρημένον γένον Φαινούσαν ἀραχλευτίζεται, τοῦ δια Κρατόλοφον τελευταῖον ἀφεὶς μέτρον δεῖ λέγειν, ἀλλὰ τὸν δάκτυλον ἐκίνει μάλιστα. Ήστιτο γέτεπια ἐποντι τὸς τῶν αὐτῶν ποταμοῦ ἐκ ἐμοῦται, αὐτὸς γαρ μέτρον δεῖ μετατίθειν. *Arist. Metaph. Lib. 4. c. 5.*

" this

“ this Supposition sprung the highest Sect of  
 “ those which are called *Heraclitical Philosophers*, and those that follow *Cratylus*, who  
 “ at last came to this, that he only moved  
 “ his Finger, but thought that nothing at all  
 “ ought to be affirmed; and reprehended  
 “ *Heraclitus* for saying, that one cannot  
 “ twice enter into the same River, because  
 “ he thought that one could not so much as  
 “ once do it;” that is, that no Material  
 Thing remained one Moment the same.

3. WHEREFORE if there be any such Thing as Intellec<sup>tion</sup>, Science, and Knowledge, distinct from External Sense, and any Immutable Truths, then there must of Necessity be some other Kind of Beings or Entities, besides these Individual Material Things, as the immediate Objects or Subjects of them, such Things as do not flow, but <sup>b</sup> always remain immutably the same, or <sup>c</sup> Permanent, and having always the same Nature, as *Plato* expresseth these immediate Objects of Knowledge; or else, in *Aristotle*'s Language, <sup>d</sup> an Immutable Essence. Who therefore confutes both these Sects of Philosophers, whereof one

<sup>b</sup> οὐ ταῦτα ἔσται τοις ἔχοντα.

<sup>c</sup> Μόνηα τοις μίαν οὐτι φύσιν ἔχοντα.

<sup>d</sup> ἀκίνητοι εἶδος.

was Extremely Metaphysical, that made all Things to stand still; whom, I confess, I understand not; the other too grossly Material, and addicted to Sense, that made nothing to stand still, but all Things to flow; after this Manner: *It is manifest, that neither they speak truly who affirm all Things to Rest, nor they that affirm all Things to move. For if all Things Rest, then the same Things would always be True and False; which is not so, because he that affirms this, once was not, and again will not be. But if all Things move, then nothing can be true, and therefore all Things will be false.* And both he and Plato compounded that Controversy thus; by acknowledging two sorts of Entities, the one Mutable, or subject to Flux and Motion, such as are especially Individual Corporeal Things; the other Immutable, that always rest or stand still, which are the Proper Objects of Certain, Constant, and immutable Knowledge, that therefore cannot be meer Nothings, Non-Entities.

*φανερὸν ὅτι τὸν ὁί πάντα πρεμεῖν λίγοντες ἀληθῆ λέγεται, τὸν δὲ πάντα κινεῖσθαι. Εἰ μὲν γὰρ πρεμεῖ πάντα, ἀεὶ ταῦτα ἀληθῆ καὶ φενόνται φαίνεται δὲ τότο μεταβάλλον. οὐ γὰρ λέγων πότε ἀντὶ τούτων ἔσται, οὐ δὲ πάντα κινεῖσθαι, οὐδὲν γάρταις ἀληθῆς, πάντα ἄρα φενόνται.*

WHICH latter kind of Being, that is, the <sup>f</sup> *Immutable Essence*, as a distinct Thing from Individual Sensibles, *Aristotle* plainly asserts against *Heraclitus*, and those other Flowing Philosophers, in these Words; <sup>g</sup> *We would have these Philosophers to know, that besides sensible Things, that are always Mutable, there is another kind of Being or Entity of such Things as are neither subject to Motion, Corruption, nor Generation.* And elsewhere he tells us, that this <sup>h</sup> *immoveable Essence* is the Object of Theoretical Knowledge, of the First Philosophy, and of the Pure Mathematicks.

4. Now these Immutable Entities are the Universal *Rationes*, or Intelligible Natures and Essences of all Things, which some compare to Unities, but *Aristotle* to Numbers; which formally considered, are Indivisible: faith he, <sup>i</sup> *The Essences of Things are like to Numbers*; because if but the least Thing be added to any Number, or substracted from it, the Number is destroyed.

<sup>f</sup> Ἀκίνητος ὄντος.

<sup>g</sup> Ἐτι δὲ ἀξιώσομεν ἀντὶς ἀπολαμβάνειν Εἰ ἀλλοι ὄντοιν ἔνοι τῶν  
θεῶν, οἵτε κόκκινοι ἀπάρχει ὅτε φεροῦ ὅτε γένεσις τὸ παρείπειν.

<sup>h</sup> Ἀκίνητος ὄντος.

<sup>i</sup> Εἰσὶ πως ἀριθμοὶ οἱ ὄντοι.

AND these are the Objects of all certain Knowledge. As for Example, the Objects of Geometry are not any Individual Material Triangles, Squares, Circles, Pyramids, Cubes, Spheres, and the like; which because they are always Mutable, nothing can be immutably affirmed of them; but they are those Indivisible and Unchangeable *Rationes* of a Triangle, Square, Circle; which are ever the same to all Geometricals, in all Ages and Places, of which such Immutable Theorems as these are demonstrated, as that a Triangle has necessarily three Angles equal to two Right Angles.

BUT if any one demand here, where this *ἀκίνητος γοτία*, these Immutable Entities do exist? I answer, *First*, that as they are considered formally, they do not properly Exist in the Individuals without us, as if they were from them imprinted upon the Understanding, which some have taken to be Aristotle's Opinion; because no Individual Material Thing is either Universal or Immutable. And if these Things were only lodged in the Individual Sensibles, then they would be unavoidably obnoxious to the Fluctuating Waves of the same reciprocating *Euripus*, in which all Individual Material Things are per-

petually whirled. But because they perish not together with them, it is a certain Argument that they exist independently upon them. Neither in the next place, do they exist somewhere else apart from the Individual Sensibles, and without the Mind, which is that Opinion that *Aristotle* justly condemns, but either unjustly or unskilfully attributes to *Plato*. For if the Mind looked abroad for its Objects wholly without it self, then all its Knowledge would be nothing but Sense and Passion.----For to know a Thing is nothing else but to comprehend it by some Inward Ideas that are domestick to the Mind, and actively exerted from it. Wherefore these Intelligible Idea's or Essences of Things, those Forms by which we understand all Things, exist no where but in the Mind it self; for it was very well determined long ago by *Socrates*, in *Plato's Parmenides*, that these Things are nothing else but *Noemata*: <sup>k</sup> "These Species or Idea's are all of them nothing but *Noemata*, or Notions that exist no where but in the Soul it self." Wherefore to say that there are immutable Natures and Essences,

<sup>k</sup> Τῶν διδῶν ἵκασο τέταν νόημα, καὶ οὐδεμίς ἀντῷ προσῆκε θύγι-  
ρεματας ἀλλοτινής σὺ ψυχῆς.

and *Rationes* of Things, distinct from the Individuals that exist without us, is all one as if one should say, that there is in the Universe above the Orb of Matter and Body, another superiour Orb of Intellectual Being, that comprehends its own Immediate Objects, that is, the Immutable *Rationes* and Ideas of Things within it self, by which it understands and knows all Things without it self.

AND yet notwithstanding though these Things exist only in the Mind, they are not therefore meer Figments of the Understanding: For if the Subjects of all Scientifical Theorems were nothing but Figments, then all Truth and Knowledge that is built upon them would be a meer Fictitious Thing; and if Truth it self and the Intellectual Nature be Fictitious Things, then what can be Real or Solid in the World? But it is evident, that though the Mind thinks of these Things at Pleasure, yet they are not Arbitrarily framed by the Mind, but have certain, determinate, and immutable Natures of their own, which are independent upon the Mind, and which are blown away into nothing at the Pleasure of the same Being that arbitrarily made them.

BUT we all Naturally conceive that those Things have not only an Eternal, but also a Necessary Existence, so that they could not ever but be, such, and so many as they are, and can never possibly Perish or Cease to be, but are absolutely Undestroyable.

6. WHICH is a Thing frequently acknowledged in the Writings of both those Famous Philosophers, *Plato* and *Aristotle*.----The former of them calling those Things, <sup>1</sup> Things " that were never made, but always are," and <sup>m</sup> " Things that were never made, nor " can be destroyed." <sup>n</sup> " Things Ingenerable and Unperishable;" *Quæ* *Plato* *negat* *gigni* *sed semper Eſſe* (as *Tully* expresseth it) *& Ratione & Intelligentia contineri*. And *Philo*, the *Platonical Jew*, calls the  $\tau\alpha$  *Νοητὰ*, which are the same Things we speak of *ἀναγκαῖτας γοῖα*, *the most Necessary Essences*, that is, such Things as could not but be, and cannot possibly not be. And *Aristotle* himself calls the *Rationes* of Things in his Metaphysics, not only *χωριτὰ* and *ἀκίνητα*, *Things separate from Matter and Immutable*, but also

<sup>1</sup>  $\tau\alpha$  *μὴ γεγόνεται*, *ἀλλ' ἀεὶ ὄνται*.

<sup>m</sup> *Μήτε γεγόνεται μήτε ἀπολλύεται*.

<sup>n</sup> *Τὰ ἀγένητα ē ἀπόλεθρα*.

*αιδία*, or *Eternal*; and in his Ethicks likewise, he calls Geometrical Truths *αιδία*, Eternal Things, *l. 3. c. 5.* “ where he makes “ the Geometrical Truth concerning the In- “ commensurability betwixt the Diameter “ and the Side of a Square, to be an Eternal “ Thing.” Elsewhere he tells us, that “ p Science, properly so called, is not of “ Things Corruptible and Contingent,” but of Things Necessary, Incorruplic and Eternal. Which Immutable and Eternal Objects of Science, in the Place before quoted, he described thus: “ Such a Kind of Entity of “ Things as has neither Motion nor Generation, “ nor Corruption,” that is, such Things as were never made, and can never be destroyed. To which, he saith, the Mind is necessarily determined. For Science or Knowledge has nothing either of Fiction or of Arbitrariness in it, but is “ the Comprehension of that “ which Immutably is.”

• Περὶ τῶν ἀείδεων ὄντων βαλίνεται, ὅτον περὶ τὸ διαμέτρῳ ἐπὶ πλευ-  
ρᾶς ὅτι ἀσύμμετροι.

♪ P 'Ου τῶν Φθαρτῶν εἴναι ἐπιτήμαν.

♩ 'Οντιαν τῶν ὄντων ὡς ὅτε κίνησις ὑπάρχει, ὅτε φορά, ὅτε γένεσις  
ἢ παραπάν.

♩ Κατάληψις τῷ ὄντι.

5. **M**OREOVER, these Things have a Constant Being, when our Particular Created Minds do not actually think of them, and therefore they are immutable in another Sense likewise, not only because they are Indivisibly the same when we think of them, but also because they have a Constant and never-failing Entity; and always are, whether our Particular Minds think of them or not. For the Intelligible Natures and Essences of a Triangle, Square, Circle, Pyramid, Cube, Sphere, &c. and all the necessary Geometrical Verities belonging to these several Figures, were not the Creatures of *Archimedes*, *Euclid*, or *Pythagoras*, or any other Inventors of Geometry; nor did then first begin to be; but all these *Rationes* and Verities had a Real and Actual Entity before, and would continue still, though all the Geometricians in the World were quite extinct, and no Man knew them or thought of them. Nay, though all the Material World were quite swept away, and also all Particular Created Minds annihilated together with it; yet there is no doubt but the Intelligible Natures or Essences of all Geometrical Figures, and the Necessary Verities belonging to them, would notwithstanding remain safe and sound. Wherefore these Things

Things had a Being also before the Material World and all Particular Intellects were Created. For it is not at all Conceivable, that ever there was a Time when there was no Intelligible Nature of a Triangle, nor any such Thing Cogitable at all, and when it was not yet actually true that a Triangle has three Angles Equal to two Right Angles, but that these Things were afterward arbitrarily made and brought into Being out of an Antecedent Nothing or Non-Entity; so that the Being of them bore some certain Date, and had a Youngness in them, and so by the same Reason might wax Old, and decay again; which Notion he often harps upon, when he speaks of the *'Eidē*, or Forms of Things, as when he says, <sup>8</sup> “ there is no Generation of the “ Essence of a Sphere,” that is, it is a Thing that is not made; but always is: and elsewhere he pronounces universally of the *'Eidē*, <sup>9</sup> “ The “ Forms of Material Things are without Ge- “ neration and Corruption,” and <sup>10</sup> “ That “ None makes the Form of any thing, for it “ is never generated.” Divers have censured

<sup>8</sup> Τοῦ σφαιραν ἔναις εὐκ τοῖς γένεσις.

<sup>9</sup> Αὐτὸν γενέσεως καὶ φθορῆς ὅλως ἔναις τὰ ἔιδη.

<sup>10</sup> Τὸ ἔιδον γένεσις ποιεῖ, γένεσις γενέσται.

*Aristotle in some of such Passages* too much to Confound Physicks and Metaphysicks together; for indeed these Things are not true in a Physical, but only in a Metaphysical Sense. That is, \* the Immediate Objects of Intellection and Science, are Eternal, necessarily existent, and Incorruptible.

7. Now the Plain Meaning of all this is nothing else, but that there is an Eternal Wisdom and Knowledge in the World, necessarily existing, which was never made, and can never cease to be or be destroyed; or, which is all one, that there is an Infinite Eternal Mind necessarily Existing, that actually comprehends himself, the Possibility of all Things, and the Verities Clinging to them. In a word, that there is a God, or an Omnipotent and Omniscient Being, necessarily existing, who therefore cannot destroy his own Being or Nature, that is, his Infinite Power and Wisdom.

FOR since the *Rationes*, Intelligible Essences, and Verities of Things, as we observed before out of *Plato*, are nothing but *Noemata*, that is, objective Notions or Knowledges, which are Things that cannot exist alone, but together with that Actual Know-

\* *Tas vennas.*

ledge in which they are Comprehended, they are the Modifications of some Mind or Intellect--- It is all one to affirm, that there are Eternal *Rationes*, Essences of Things, and Verities necessarily existing, and to say that there is an Infinite, Omnipotent and Eternal Mind, necessarily existing, that always actually comprehendeth himself, the Essences of all Things, and their Verities ; or, rather, which is the *Rationes*, Essences, and Verities of all Things ; for the *Rationes* and Essences of Things are not Dead Things, like so many Statues, Images or Pictures hung up somewhere by themselves alone in a World : Neither are Truths meer Sentences and Propositions written down with Ink upon a Book, but they are Living Things, and nothing but Modifications of Mind or Intellect ; and therefore the First Intellect is Essentially and Archetypally all *Rationes* and Verities, and all Particular created Intellects are but Derivative Participations of it, that are Printed by it with the same Ectypal Signatures upon them.

AND we may undoubtedly conclude, that it is a Thing altogether as Certain, that there is an Infinite and Eternal Mind, [that is, a God] Necessarily Existing in the World, as that there ever was the *Ratio* or Intelligible Essence

Essence of a Triangle, or Circle, of Unity and Duality; and that it was Ever actually true, that a Triangle hath three Angles Equal to two Right Angles; or that *Æqualia addita æqualibus efficiunt Æqualia*: or the like.

8. NEITHER does this hinder or Contradict the Truth of this Assertion, That many that doubt concerning the Existence of a God, yet notwithstanding confidently believe the Necessary Eternity of these Things; and persuade themselves, that though there were no Mind nor Intellect, and so no God in the World; nay, though there was no Matter neither, and no Substantial Entity at all, yet notwithstanding these *Rationes* and Verities of Things would necessarily be as they are.

9. FOR there is an Absolute Impossibility in this Assertion, that these Essences of Things and Verities should *be*, though there were no substantial Entity or no Mind existing. For these Things themselves must of Necessity be either Substances, or Modifications of Substance---For what is neither Substance nor Modification of a Substance, is a pure non-Entity---And if they be Modifications of Substance, they cannot possibly exist without that Substance whose Modifications they are----Which must either be Matter or Mind, but they

are

are not the Modifications of Matter as such, because they are Universal and Immutable; therefore they are the Modifications of some Mind or Intellect; so that these cannot be Eternal without an Eternal Mind.

AND these Men do but deceive themselves in the Hypothetical Assertion, that there would have been these *Rationes* and Universal Verities, though there had never been a God or Intellect; neither considering what the Nature of God is, whose Existence they would question or doubt of, nor what those *Rationes* and Verities are, which they would make so necessarily existent, by Means whereof they do at once assert and question the same Thing: For that which begets so strong a Persuasion in their Minds, that the *Rationes* of Things and Universal Verities are so necessarily Eternal, though they do not perceive it, is nothing else but an Inward invincible Prepossession of the Necessary Existence of God, or an Infinite Eternal Omnipotent and Omniscient Mind, (that always actually comprehends himself, and the Extent of his own Power, or the Ideas of all Possible Things) so deeply radicated and infix'd in their Minds, as that they cannot possibly quit themselves of it, though they endeavour it  
never

never so much, but it will Unawares adhere to them, even when they force themselves to suppose the non-Existence of God as a Person, whose Idea they do not clearly comprehend: That is, the Force of Nature is so strong in them as to make them acknowledge the Thing, when they deny the Word. So that the true Meaning of this Phenomenon is nothing else but this, that God is a Being so necessarily existent, that though Men will suppose the non-Existence of him, and deny the Name, yet notwithstanding they cannot but confute themselves, and Confess the Thing.

10. Nay, it is clearly and Mathematically demonstrable from what we have already proved, that there is some Eternal Mind: for as it is unquestionably certain, that something in the World was eternal, meerly from hence, because there is Being, which could not spring out of Nothing; and therefore if there were no God, Matter of Necessity must be eternal: So because there is Mind and Understanding, and actual Knowledge in the World, and these Things could not spring out of Matter, Wisdom and Knowledge must needs be Eternal Things, and there must be of Necessity some Eternal Mind.

FOR, *ex Hypothesi*, that once there had been no Knowledge, no intelligible *Rationes* or *Essences* of Things, no Mind or Intellect in the World, it would have been absolutely impossible that ever there should have been any such Thing, because it could neither spring out of Nothing, nor, which is all one, out of Senseless and Unknowing Matter.

11. Now because every Thing that is imperfect must needs depend upon Something that is Perfect in the same Kind, our particular Imperfect Understandings, which do not always actually contain the *Rationes* of Things and their Verities in them, which are many times ignorant, doubting, erring, and slowly proceed by Discourse and Ratiocination from one Thing to another, must needs be Derivative Participations of a Perfect, Infinite and Eternal Intellect, in which is the *Rationes* of all Things, and all Universal Verities are always actually comprehended. Which Consideration is so obvious and unavoidable, that Aristotle himself could not miss of it---For he tells us, that since our Understandings are but <sup>y</sup> Potentially all Things, that is, have not an Actual but Potential Omnipresence only,

<sup>y</sup> Δυνάμεις πάντα.

there must of Necessity be in *Rerum Natura*, another Intellect that is actually all Knowledge, and is the same to our Understandings <sup>2</sup> “ that “ Active Art is to passive Matter,” and <sup>3</sup> “ that the Light is to our Eyes,” and which does not <sup>4</sup> “ sometimes Understand, and sometimes not “ understand <sup>5</sup>,” but is always Eternal <sup>6</sup> “ Ac-“ tual Knowledge.” A Sun that never sets, an Eye that never winks-----Wherefore though all our Knowledges be not stamped or impressed upon our Souls from the Matter; they are all, as it were, <sup>7</sup> *Ectypal Prints*, and <sup>8</sup> *Derivative Signatures* from one Arche-typal Intellect, that is Essentially the *Rationes* of all Things and all Verities.

12. AND from hence it comes to pass, that all Understandings are not only constantly furnished with Forms and Idea's to conceive all Things by, and thereby enabled to understand all the clear Conceptions of one another, being printed all over at once with the Seeds of universal Knowledge, but also

<sup>2</sup> Ὅτον ἡ τίχνη πρὸς τὴν ὄλην.

<sup>3</sup> Ὅτον τὸ φῶς.

<sup>4</sup> Οὐτέ μὲν νοεῖν, ὅτε δὲ οὐ νοεῖν.

<sup>5</sup> As it were sometimes awake, and sometimes asleep.

<sup>6</sup> Κατ' ἐγέργειαν ἵπισημα.

<sup>7</sup> Εσφραγίσματα. <sup>8</sup> Ἐκμάγματα.

have

have exactly the same Idea's of the same Things; whereas if these Things were impressed upon our Souls from the Matter without, all Men would not be readily furnished with Idea's to conceive all Things by at every Time, it being merely casual and Contingent what Things occur to Men's several Senses; neither could their Idea's be exactly alike to one another, because no Individual Objects are so; and therefore when one spoke of one Thing, another would mean another. Much less could Men so promptly and expediteley exert them upon all Occasions, if they were dead Forms passively received only, and not all virtually contained in some one Active and Vital Principle that had a Potential Omnipresence in it.

WHEREFORE, as *Themistius* observes, Men could not possibly confer and discourse together in that Manner as they do, presently perceiving one another's Meaning, and having the very same Conceptions of Things in their Minds, <sup>2</sup> " if all did not partake of one and " the same Intellect." Neither could one so readily teach, and another learn, <sup>3</sup> " if

<sup>2</sup> Εἰ μὲν τις ἦν ἄλις οὐ μάρτις ἀκούειν μένει.

<sup>3</sup> Εἰ μὲν ταῦτα οὐ τὸ σόμα τὸ θεοῖς οὐτοῖς οὐ τὸ μαρτιώντος.

“ there were not the same ectypal Stamps of  
“ Things in the Mind both of the Teacher  
“ and the Learner”.

13. **MOREOVER**, from hence also it comes to pass that Truths, though they be in never so many several and distant Minds apprehending them, yet they are not broken, multiplied, or diversified thereby; but they are one and the same Individual Truths in them all. So that it is but one Truth and Knowledge that is in all the Understandings in the World. Just as when a Thousand Eyes look upon the Sun at once, they all see the same Individual Object. Or as when a great Crowd or Throng of People hear one and the same Orator speaking to them all, it is one and the same Voice that is in the several Ears of all those several Auditors; So in like manner, when innumerable Created Understandings direct themselves to the Contemplation of the same Universal and immutable Truths, they do all of them but as it were listen to one and the same Original Voice of the eternal Wisdom that is never silent; and the several Conceptions of those Truths in their Minds, are but like several Echo's of the same *Verba Mentis* of the Divine Intellect resounding in them.

14. FROM what we have already declared, it is evident, That Wisdom, Knowledge, and Understanding, are Eternal and self-subsistent Things, superiour to Matter and all sensible Beings, and Independent upon them. Which Mystery is thus acknowledged both in Christianity and *Platonism*, in that Wisdom and Intellect are made the Eternal and First-begotten Offspring of the First Original Goodness, the Fountain of all Things, *Prov. viii. 22. The Lord possessed me in the Beginning of his Way, before his Works of old. I was set up from Everlasting, from the Beginning 'ere ever the Earth was, &c.*

AND indeed that Opinion, that Knowledge, Wisdom, and Understanding, is in its own Nature posterior to Sensible and Material Things, and doth result out of them, or proceed only from the Radiation and Activity of the Matter on that which understands, is nothing else but downright Atheism. For if this were true, that Wisdom, Knowledge, and Intellection were in its own Nature posterior to Sensible and Corporeal Things, as being nothing but the Stamp or Impress of them, then it must needs follow that this Corporeal World was not made or framed by any antecedent Wisdom or Knowledge,

but that it sprang up of it self from the blind, fortuitous, and giddy Motions of Eternal Atoms; from whence all that Knowledge that is in the World did afterward result. Which is all one as to say that there is no God at all.

BUT if any will here pretend, that there is indeed a Knowledge in God antecedent to all corporeal Being, and therefore no Passion but a Thing independent upon Matter and self-originated; but yet, notwithstanding, the Knowledge of all created Understandings is not a Thing immediately derived from thence, but only taken up at the Rebound or Second-hand from sensible and corporeal Things: This is just as if one should say, that there is indeed a Brightness or Lucidity in the Sun, but yet notwithstanding the Light which is in the Air, is not derived from that Light which is in the Body of the Sun, but springs immediately out of the Power of the dark Air; which being a Thing apparently absurd, it may be presumed that this Assertion is nothing but a verbal and pretended Acknowledgement of a God, that has an antecedent and an independent Knowledge, made by such as really deny the same; for otherwise, to what Purpose should they so vio-

lently and distortedly pervert the natural Order and Dependency of Things in the Universe, and cut off that Cognition and Connexion which is betwixt Things imperfect and Things perfect of the same Kind, betwixt created Minds and the increated Mind, which is the intellectual Scale or Ladder by which we climb up to God, if they did really believe and acknowledge any such Thing. But he that can believe that all human Knowledge, Wisdom, and Prudence, has no other Source and Original than the Radiations and Impresses of the dark Matter, and the fortuitous and tumultuous Jumblings thereof; it is justly to be suspected, that he is too near akin to those antient Theologues that *Aristotle* speaks of, <sup>i</sup> “ that fetched the Original of God and all Things out of Night,” or the dark *Chaos* of Matter; that held there is no God at all, or that blind and Senseless Matter and Chance are the only Original of all Things.

<sup>i</sup> Οἱ καὶ πούκτος μύτα γεννῶντες.

## C H A P. V.

I. **W**E formerly shewed that the Perception of External Sense, as such, is a meer Relative and Phantaſtical Thing: There being nothing absolutely true and Real in it, but only this, that the Soul hath such a Paſſion, Affection, Phantaſm, Appearance, or Seeming in it. But Sense being but an Idiopathy, we cannot be absolutely certain by it, that every other Person or Animal has the same Paſſion or Affection or Phantaſm in it from the same Corporeal Object that we Ourselves have. <sup>2</sup> “Are you certain that every other Animal has the same Sense or Phantaſm of every Colour that you have,” (saith Socrates, according to *Protagoras* his Sense)---

<sup>2</sup> Η σὺ διδίχνεσθαι ἂν ὡς ὅιν σοι φαίνεται ἔχειν χρῆμα τοῖς τον Εἰστείν ζόντα; Θεατ. μὰ Δί’ οὐκ ἔγωγε. Σωκ. πά σοι ἄλλως ἀνθρώπῳ ἀρέτῳ ὄμοιον Εἰσι φαίνεται ὅτι ἐν ἔχειν τῦτο ιχνοῦς οὐ ποὺ μᾶλλον ὅτι καὶ δέ σοι ἀντῷ ταυτὸν, οὐδὲ τὸ μηδέποτε ὄμοιον ἀντὸν σεαυτῷ ἔχειν.

“ Nay, that every other Man has the same.  
“ Or, *Lastly*, can you be so much as sure  
“ that your self shall always have the same  
“ Phantasm from the same Object, when  
“ you are not always the same with your  
“ self?” and Passions are diversified by the  
*ἰδιορυγματία* of the Patient----. Wherefore we  
cannot be sure merely by the Passions of  
Sense, what the Absolute Nature of a Corpo-  
real Object is without us, our Perception be-  
ing only Relative to Our selves, and our se-  
veral Organs and bodily Crasies.

Now, we cannot be sure that there is any Object at all before us, when we have a Phantasm of Sensation of Something. For as much as not only in our Dreams, but also when we are awake, we have Phantasms and Sensations in us of Things that have no Reality.

THE Reason of all which is, because by external Sense we do but suffer from Corporeal Things existing without, and so do not comprehend the Nature of the Thing as it is Absolutely in it self, but only our own Passion from it. Neither is our Sense a Passion immediately from the Thing it self that is perceived, for then it would not be altogether so uncertain as it is, but only from cer-

tain Local Motions in that Body which the Soul is vitally united to, by the Mediation whereof it perceives other Things at a Distance, which Local Motions and Passions may be produced when there are no such Objects.

So that if there were no other Perceptive Power or Faculty Distinct from external Sense, all our Perceptions would be merely Relative, Seeming, and Phantastical, and not reach to the Absolute and Certain Truth of any Thing; and every one would but, as *Protagoras* expounds it, <sup>b</sup>“think his own ‘Private and Relative Thoughts Truths,’ and all our Cogitations being nothing but Appearances, would be indifferently alike True Phantasms and one as another.

2. But we have since also demonstrated, that there is another Perceptive Power in the Soul Superior to outward Sense, and of a distinct Nature from it, which is the Power of Knowing or Understanding, that is, an Active Exertion from the Mind it self. And therefore has this Grand Pre-eminence above Sense, that it is no Idiopathy, not a mere Private, a Relative, Seeming, and Phantasti-

<sup>b</sup> Τὰ ἴδια μόνον σκέψεις.

cal Thing; but the Comprehension of that which Absolutely IS and IS not.

For whereas the  $\tau\alpha\ \alphaἰσθητ\alpha$ , Objects of external Sense, are nothing but Individual Corporeal Things existing without us, from which by Sense we receive only Idols, Images and Passions; by reason of which, as Plotinus observes, <sup>c</sup> “ That which is known by Sense, is but an Image of that Individual Body existing without, which Sense suffers from; but the Object of Sense is a Being not inwardly comprehended, but remaining without”-- And <sup>d</sup> “ For this Cause, the Truth of the Thing is not in Sense, but only Opinion.

Yet the  $\tau\alpha\ Νοητ\alpha$ , the Proper and Immediate Objects of Science, Rightly so called, and Intellection, being the Intelligible Essences of Things and their necessary Verities, that exist nowhere but in the Mind it self; The Understanding by its Active Power is fully Master of them, and comprehends <sup>e</sup> “ not Idols or Images of them, but the very Things them-

<sup>c</sup> Τὸ γιγνωσκόμενον δὲ οἰδηπότεσσι. τὸ περιγραμμένον δὲ οὐδὲν, Εἰ μὲν ἀρτὸ τὸ περιγραμμένον οὐδεὶς λαμβάνει μένει γὰρ ἐκεῖνο ἔξω.

<sup>d</sup> Διὸ τῦτο σὺ ταῖς οἰδηπότεσσιν όχι ἔτιν αἰλιθεῖα αὐλλὰ δόξα, ὅτε παραδίχομένη Εἰ δέ τῦτο δόξα ἔται αὐλλο παραδίχεται, αὐλίς οὐτοῦ ἐκίνει ἐξ ὧ τῦτο ὁ παραδίχεται ἔχει.

<sup>e</sup> Άυτοὶ τὸ περιγραμμένον, οὐ όχι οὐδελας μόνον.

“ selves,” within it self; <sup>f</sup> “ Knowledge is, “ not the Perception of Things Abroad with-“ out the Mind,” but is the Mind’s Compre-“ hending it self. Otherwise, as the same Phi-“ losopher adds<sup>g</sup>, the Mind, in considering “ Things, will not apprehend the Things them-“ selves, but only their Images, &c.

WHEREFORE it is most true, as *Aristotle* often observeth, <sup>h</sup> “ that the Knowledge of any “ Scientifical Theorem is one and the self-“ same Thing with the Thing Known; <sup>i</sup> “ that “ which Knows, and that which is Known, are “ really the same Thing. <sup>k</sup> The Knowledge “ of any Metaphysical or Mathematical Truth “ is the very Thing; <sup>l</sup> or Truth it self, “ Known,” and not any Passion from it, or Image and Picture of it. And though the same Philosopher writes elsewhere, that <sup>m</sup> Sense is the same with Sensible Things, and Understanding the same with the Things understood; yet the Difference betwixt those two is

<sup>f</sup> Ο νοῦς τὰ νοητὰ γνώσκων οὐκ ἔτερα ὄντα γνώσκει.

ε Θεωρήσει ἀυτὰ οὐκ ἔχων ἀντά, οἰδώλας δὲ ἀυτῶν — τὸ τόνυν ἀληθινὸν οὐκ ἔχων, οἰδώλας δὲ τοῦ ἀληθεῖς παρ’ αὐτῷ λαβὼν, τὰ ψευδῆ ἔχει, Ε οὐδὲν ἀληθές.

<sup>h</sup> Ο νοῦς ὁ κατ’ ἐνέργειαν τὰ πράγματα νοῶν.

<sup>i</sup> Τὸ ἀυτόν ἐστι τὸ νοῦν Ε τὸ νοέμενον.

<sup>k</sup> Η ἐπιστήμη η θεωρητική Ε τὸ ἐπιστητὸν τὸ ἀυτόν ἐστι.

<sup>l</sup> Τὸ ἀυτόν ἐστιν η κατ’ ἐνέργειαν ἐπιστήμην τῷ πράγματι.

<sup>m</sup> Αἰσθητις is τὰ αἰσθητὰ, and Νόησις τὰ νοητὰ.

very

very great, for the <sup>n</sup> *Sensible Things* Really exist without, and Sense has only a Passive and Phantasmatical Representation of them; but the <sup>o</sup> *Intellectual Conceptions*, properly so called, the Primary Objects of Science and Intellection, that is, the <sup>p</sup> “separate eternal “ and immutable *Rationes of Things*,” exist no where but in the Mind it self, being its own Idea’s; For the Soul is, as *Aristotle* speaks, <sup>q</sup> *The Place of Forms and Idea’s*, and they have no other Entity at all but only in being Known or Understood. And by and through these Inward Idea’s of the Mind it self, which are its Primary Objects, does it know and understand all External Individual Things, which are the secondary Objects of Knowledge only.

3. **MOREOVER**, that the Intellection and Knowing Perception of the Soul is not Relative and Phantastical as the Sensitive, is evident from hence, because it is liable to Falsehood, which it could not be, if it had not a Power of Comprehending Absolute Truth.

FOR External Sense, for this very Reason, is not capable of Falsehood, because as such,

<sup>n</sup> Τὰ αἰσθητά.

<sup>o</sup> Τὰ νοητά.

<sup>p</sup> Τὰ χαρισματικά ἀνθεκτά. <sup>q</sup> Τοποί σιδῶν.

it does not comprehend the absolute Truth of any Thing ; being only *a Phantasm* or Appearance, and all Appearances as such are alike True.

So in like manner, if the Noetical Perceptions of the Soul were only Phantaſtical, and did not extend to the Comprehension of the Absolute Truth of Things, then every Opinion would of Necessity be alike True, neither could there be any Absolute Falsehood in any, because *Every Phancy is true*, that is, Every Phancy is a Phancy or an Appearance, and nothing more is required to it ; for Absolute Truth belongs not to the Nature of it. But it is evident to all that are not sunk and degenerated below Men into brutiſh Sottiſhness, that there are False Opinions : whence it follows undeniably, that the Noetical Knowing and Intellective Power extends to the Absolute Truth of Things. So that whatever Theoretical Universal Proposition in Geometry or Metaphysics is True to one Mind, the same is Absolutely True in it ſelf, and therefore True to all Minds whatsoever throughout the whole World, that clearly understand it.

*Φανταſια.*

*Πάντα Φανταſια οὐτού ἀληθή.*

4. WHEREFORE, though the Immediate Objects of Knowledge, which are the Intelligible Essences of Things, and their Relations to One another or Verities, exist no where but in Minds; yet notwithstanding they are not Figments of the Mind, because then Every Opinion or Cogitation would be alike True, that is, a true Figment, having no other Truth but Relative to that Particular Mind whose Figment it is. But these Things have an Absolute and Immutable Nature in themselves, and their Mutual Respects to one another are alike immutable. And therefore those Opinions and Cogitations of the Mind, which are not conformable to the Immutable Reality of those Objective Idea's, have an Absolute Falsehood in them. As for Example, the Nature of a Triangle is an Immutable Thing, and this is demonstrable of it, as immutably and necessarily true, that it hath three Angles equal to two Right ones: neither can any Man's Opinion or Thinking make it otherwise: For it is a false Opinion, unless it be agreeable to the Immutable Nature of a Triangle. So likewise the Plain Regular Geometrical Solids, as such, have an Immutable Nature or Essence: and it is demonstrable of them, that there are five such Bodies, and that there

there can be no more: And any Opinion to the Contrary will be an Absolute Falsehood. Wherefore every Opinion or Thinking is not Knowledge, but only a Right Opinion: and therefore Knowledge is not Relative, *ως το* *νεῖν*, as Sense is. Truth is the most Unbending and Uncompliable, the most necessary, Firm, Immutable, and *Adamantine* Thing in the World.

4. **M O R E O V E R**, because these Intelligible Essences of Things, as before was observed, are like Unities indivisible; so that if the least be added to them, or detracted from them, they are not the same, but something else; whenever the same Things are rightly understood by any Minds, they must of Necessity have all the same Truths belonging to them every where. Nay, these Truths are not at all multiplied, as we observed before, by the Multiplicity of Minds that apprehend them; but are one and the same Individual Truths in those several Minds: For as much as Wisdom, Truth, and Knowledge, are but one and the same Eternal original Light shining in all Created Understandings.

To conclude therefore; Whenever any Theoretical Proposition is Rightly understood by

by any one Particular Mind whatsoever, and wheresoever it be, the Truth of it is no Private Thing, nor Relative to that Particular Mind only, but it is *a Catholick and Universal Truth*, as the *Stoicks* speak, throughout the whole World; nay, it would not fail to be a Truth throughout Infinite Worlds, if there were so many, to all such Minds as should rightly understand it.

5. But probably it may be here demanded, how a Man shall Know when his Conceptions are Conformed to the Absolute and Immutable Natures or Essences of Things, and their Unchangeable Relations to one another? Since the Immediate Objects of Intellection Exist in the Mind it self, we must not go about to look for the *Criterion* of Truth without our selves, by Consulting Individual Sensibles, as the Exemplars of our Idea's, and measuring our Conceptions by them. And how is it possible to know by Measuring of Sensible Squares, that the Diameter of every Square is Incommensurable with the Sides? Nay, as was observed before, The Necessary Truth of no Geometrical Theorem can ever be examined, proved, or determined by Sen-

To conclude, therefore, *W. m. 6962* is probably undifferentiable.

fible Things Mechanically. And though the Eternal Divine Intellect be the Archetypal Rule of Truth, we cannot consult that neither, to see whether our Conceptions be Commensurate with it. I answer therefore, that the *Criterion* of true Knowledge is not to be looked for any where Abroad without our own Minds, neither in the Height above, nor in the Depth beneath, but only in our Knowledge and Conceptions themselves. For the Entity of all Theoretical Truth is nothing else but Clear Intelligibility, and whatever is Clearly Conceived, is an Entity and a Truth; but that which is False, Divine Power it self cannot make it to be clearly and distinctly Understood, because Falsehood is a Non-Entity, and a Clear Conception is an Entity: and Omnipotence it self cannot make a Non-Entity to be an Entity.

WHEREFORE no Man ever was or can be deceived in taking that for an Epistemonical Truth which he clearly and distinctly apprehends, but only in Assenting to Things not clearly apprehended by him, which is the only true Original of all Error.

6. BUT there is another Opinion that seems to have gained the Countenance of some

some very learned Philosophers, which differs but a little from the *Protagorean* Doctrine; though for my Part I conceive it not to be an Opinion, but only a certain Scheme of Modesty and Humility, which they thought decorous to take upon themselves, that they might not seem to arrogate too much either to themselves, or to their excellent Performances, by not so much as pretending to demonstrate any Thing to be Absolutely true, but only Hypothetically, or upon Supposition that our Faculties are rightly made.

FOR if we cannot otherwise possibly be certain of the Truth of any Thing, but only *ex hypothesi*, that our Faculties are rightly made, of which none can have any certain Assurance but only he that made them, then all Created Minds whatsoever must of Necessity be condemned to an Eternal Scepsis. Neither ought they ever to assent to any Thing as certainly True, since all their Truth and Knowledge as such, is but Relative to their Faculties Arbitrarily made, that may possibly be false, and their clearest constant Apprehensions nothing but perpetual Delusions.

WHEREFORE according to this Doctrine, we having no absolute Certainty of the first Principles of all our Knowledge, as that, *Quod cogitat, est. Aequalia addita aequalibus efficiunt aequalia. Omnis Numerus est vel Par vel Impar*, we can neither be sure of any Mathematical nor Metaphysical Truth, nor of the Existence of God, nor of our selves.

FOR whereas some would endeavour to prove the Truth of their Intellectual Faculties from hence, because there is a God, whose Nature also is such, as that he cannot deceive: It is plain that this is nothing but a Circle, and makes no Progress at all, forasmuch as all the Certainty which they have of the Existence of God, and of his Nature, depends wholly upon the Arbitrary Make of their Faculties; which, for ought they know, may be false. Nay, according to this Doctrine, no Man can Certainly Know that there is any Absolute Truth in the World at all; because it is nothing but his Faculties which makes him think there is, which possibly may be false. Wherefore upon this Supposition, all created Knowledge, as such, is a meer Phantastical Thing.

Now this is very strange to assert, that God cannot make a Creature which shall be able certainly to know either the Existence of God, or of himself; or whether there be any Absolute Truth or no.

7. IT is evident that this Opinion plainly supposes that Intellectual Faculties may be so made, as clearly and distinctly to understand that to be true which is absolutely false, and impossible (for unless they did acknowledge that we do clearly understand some Things, they could not undertake so much as hypothetically to demonstrate any thing) as for Example, that the Whole is not greater than one of its Parts, or that the three Angles of a Triangle are never equal to two Right Angles.

Now we have already demonstrated, that a Falsehood can never be clearly conceived or apprehended to be true, because a Falsehood is a meer Non-Entity; and whatsoever is clearly conceived or understood, is an Entity; but a Non-Entity can never become an Entity. Nay, the true Knowledge or Science which exists no where but in the Mind it self, has no other Entity at all besides Intelligibility; and therefore whatsoever is clearly intelligible, is absolutely true.

Hence it comes to pass, that both Philosophers and Divines have without Scruple measured the Divine Omnipotence it self, and the Possibility of Things, by their own clear Intellections concerning them; and so pronounce that God himself cannot make Contradictions to be true at the same time; whereas it were an high and unpardonable Presumption thus to venture to measure the Divine Omnipotence, if there were not an absolute Certainty of the Truth of clear Intellections, as being nothing else but the Immutable Wisdom of God participated and imparted to us. And if it be absolutely impossible even to Omnipotence, that Contradictories should be true together, then Omnipotence it self cannot make any such Faculties as shall clearly Understand that which is false to be true, since the Essence of Falsehood consists in nothing else but Non-Intelligibility.

But if they will say that it is not impossible that Contradictions should be true, because our Faculties, which make us think so, may be false and deceive us in every Thing, the necessary Consequence from hence will be, that it is possible that there may be no Certain Knowledge at all, because

because if Contradictories may be true, then nothing can be certainly Affirmed or Denied of any thing.

8. WHEREFORE, be our Faculties what they will, and let them be supposed to be made how you will, yet notwithstanding Whatsoever is clearly Understood and conceived, has an Objective Entity in it, and must of necessity be true. For a clear Conception cannot be nothing. And though Intellectual Faculties may be made Obscure more or less, yet it is not possible that they should ever be made False, so as clearly to apprehend whatsoever is True to be False, and what is False to be True.

So that if there were a World of Men created either in the Moon or elsewhere, that should affirm the Contradictories to all the Theorems in Geometry; Forasmuch as we certainly Know that we clearly understand them to be true, and that Falsehood can never be clearly Understood, we ought not in the least to question from hence whether our Faculties or theirs were made true, or to suspect that Truth and Knowledge were such whiffling Things, as that they meerly depended upon an Arbitrary Make of Faculties; but Conclude without

any Controversy, that this was but a *Bedlam-World* of mad frantick and distracted Souls, that had no clear Apprehensions of any Thing, and either by meer Chance or Humour happened to assent to Every Thing that was false as true.

9. BUT yet if any one will still pertinaciously urge, that it is nothing but our Faculties which instruct us thus, that every clear Conception is an Entity, and that the Entity of Truth is nothing but clear Intelligibility; that Contradictions cannot be true, or if they could, then there were no Possibility of any Certain Knowledge; that all this is from our Faculties, but that still our Faculties themselves may be false; nay, it is not reasonable to think that the Intellectual Faculties of any Creatures should be absolutely Infallible in any Thing, because this seems to be the Peculiar Privilege and sole Prerogative of the Deity.

I ANSWER, That this is the Thing we contend for, that the Ultimate Resolution of Theoretical Truth, and the only Criterion of it, is in the Clearness of the Apprehensions themselves, and not in any of *the Kritiken.*

A. T.

supposed

supposed blind, and unaccountable Make of Faculties. So that the Certainty of clear Apprehensions is not to be derived from the Contingent Truth of Faculties, but the Goodness of Faculties is only to be tried by the Clearness and Distinctness of Apprehensions. For be these Faculties what they will, Clear Intellectual Conceptions must of Necessity be Truths, because they are real Entities. And to suppose that Faculties may be so made, as to beget Clear Apprehensions of Things that are not, as if Knowledge were an Arbitrary Fictitious Thing, is much like that Opinion of some, That all the New Celestial Phænomena, as of the Jovial Planets, and the Mountains in the Moon, and the like, are no Real Things ; but that the Clear Diaphanous Crystal of the Telescopes may be so artificially Cut, Ground and Polished, as to make all those, and any other Phænomena, Clearly to appear to Sense, when there is no such Thing : Nay, it is more absurd and ridiculous to imagine, that that more than Crystalline Pellucid intellectual Faculty, by which we perceive the Truth of Things, can be Arbitrarily so made or polished, as

to represent any Non-Entities whatsoever, as Clear and Real Objects of Intellection.

10. Nay, to make the Certainty of all Truth and Knowledge, Not to be determined by the Clearness of Apprehensions themselves, but a supposed unaccountable Truth and Rectitude of Faculties, and so by the Uncertainty thereof, quite to baffle all our Clearest Intellections, is quite to pervert the Nature of Knowledge, which is *the Comprehension of that which Absolutely is*; which is not terminated in the Appearance only, as Sense is, but in that *which is*, and whose Evidence and Certainty is no Extrinscal, Adventitious, and borrowed Thing, but Native and Intrinscal to it self.

For if Knowledge have no Inward Kriterion of its own, but the Certainty of all Truth and Knowledge depend upon an Arbitrary Peculiar Make of Faculties, which is not a Thing knowable in it self, neither can there be any Assurance of it given but what is Extrinscal by Testimony and Revelation, (in artificial Arguments), there will be

*Δικαίωσις οὐτιστική.*  
*Τὸ φαντασματικόν.*

*τὸ γένος.*

no such Thing as Knowledge, but all will be meer Credulity and Belief.

¶ 11. It is a Fond Imagination for any to suppose that it is derogatory to the Glory of God, to bestow or import any such Gift upon his Creatures as Knowledge is, which hath an Intrinsic Evidence within it self, or that Creatures should have a Certainty of the first Principles, which all Men are conscious that they do so clearly understand, that they cannot doubt of them, as that *Nihili nulla est affectio. Äequalia addita àequalibus efficient àqualia*; without which they can know nothing at all; though they be notwithstanding Ignorant, doubting, and erring in many Things, and slowly proceed in their Ratiocinations from one Thing to another; whereas on the Contrary, it is plainly derogatory to it to suppose that God cannot make any Creature, that can possibly have any certain Knowledge of God's own Existence, or any Thing more than a bare Credulity of the same.

¶ 12. WHEREFORE since it cannot be denied but every Clear Apprehension is an Entity, and the Essence of Truth is nothing but clear Intelligibility, those Philosophers

must lay the Stress of their Cause here, that Intellectual Faculties may be so made, as that Men can never certainly tell when they have clear Apprehensions, but may think they have them, when they have not.

AND it cannot be denied but that Men are oftentimes deceived, and think they clearly comprehend what they do not: but it does not follow from hence, because Men sometimes think that they clearly comprehend what they do not, that therefore they can never be certain that they do clearly comprehend any thing; which is just as if we should argue, that because in our Dreams we think we have clear Sensations, we cannot therefore be ever sure, when we are awake, that we see Things that really are.

I SHALL conclude this Discourse with that of *Origen* against *Celsus*. <sup>1</sup> *Science and Knowledge is the only firm Thing in the World*, without a Participation of which communicated to them from God, all Creatures would be meer Ludibria and Vanity.

<sup>1</sup> Μόνον τὰν ὄνταν βέβαιον οὐτίς γνωστός.

CHAP. VI.

1. WE have now abundantly confuted the *Protagorean* Philosophy, which, that it might be sure to destroy the Immutable Natures of Just and Unjust, would destroy really Science or Knowledge, and make it Relative and Phantastical. Having shewed that this Tenet is not only most absurd and contradictory in it self, but also manifestly repugnant to that very Atomical Physiology, on which *Protagoras* endeavoured to found it, and, than which nothing can more effectually confute and destroy it: and also largely demonstrated, that though Sense be indeed a mere Relative and Phantastical Perception, as *Protagoras* thus far rightly supposed; yet notwithstanding there is a Superior Power of Intellecction and Knowledge of a different Nature from Sense, which is not terminated

minated <sup>m</sup> in meer Seeming and *Appearance* only, but <sup>n</sup> in the *Truth* and *Reality* of *Things*, and reaches to the Comprehension of that which *Really* and *Absolutely* is, whose Objects are the *Eternal* and *Immutable* *Essences* and *Natures* of *Things*, and their *Unchangeable* *Relations* to one another.

2. To prevent all Mistake, I shall again remember, what I have before intimated, that where it is affirmed that the *Essences* of all *Things* are *Eternal* and *Immutable*; which Doctrine the Theological Schools have constantly avouched, this is only to be understood of the *Intelligible* *Essences* and *Rationes* of *Things*, as they are the *Objects* of the *Mind*: And that there neither is nor can be any other Meaning of it, than this, that there is an *Eternal* *Knowledge* and *Wisdom*, or an *Eternal* *Mind* or *Intellect*, which comprehends within it self the *Steady* and *Immutable* *Rationes* of all *Things* and their *Verities*, from which all *Particular* *Intellects* are derived, and on which they do depend. But not that the *Constitutive* *Essences* of all *Individual* *Created* *Things* were *Eternal* and

<sup>m</sup> Ε, τῷ φαινομένῳ.

<sup>n</sup> Εγ τῷ οὐτι.

Uncreated, as if God in Creating of the World, did nothing else, but as some sarcastically express it, *Sartoris instar Rerum Effentias vestire Existentia*, only cloathed the Eternal, Increated, and Antecedent Essences of Things with a New outside Garment of Existence, and not created the Whole of them: And as if the Constitutive Essences of Things could Exist apart separately from the Things themselves, which absurd Conceit Aristotle frequently, and no less deservedly chastises.

3. WHEREFORE the Result of all that we have hitherto said is this, that the Intelligible Natures and Essences of Things are neither Arbitrary nor Phantastical, that is, neither Alterable by any Will whatsoever, nor changeable by Opinion; and therefore every Thing is Necessarily and Immutably to Science and Knowledge what it is, whether Absolutely, or Relatively, to all Minds and Intellects in the World. So that if Moral Good and Evil, Just and Unjust, signify any Reality, either Absolute or Relative, in the Things so denominated, as they must have some certain Natures, which are the Actions or Souls of Men, they

they are neither Alterable by meer Will  
nor Opinion.

UPON which Ground that wise Philosopher *Plato*, in his *Mino*s, determines that Νόμος, a Law, is not δόγμα πόλεως, any Arbitrary Decree of a City or supreme Governours; because there may be Unjust Decrees, which therefore are no Laws, but *the Invention of that which IS*, or what is Absolutely or Immutably Just, in its own Nature. Though it be very true also, that the Arbitrary Constitutions of those that have Lawful Authority of Commanding, when they are not materially Unjust, are Laws also in a secondary Sense, by virtue of that Natural and Immutable Justice or Law that requires Political Order to be Observed.

4. BUT I have not taken all this Pains only to Confute Scepticism or Phantasticism, or meerly to defend and corroborate our Argument for the Immutable Natures of Just and Unjust; but also for some other Weighty Purposes that are very much conduced to the Busines that we have in hand. And first of all, that the Soul is

• Τοῦ εἰτιοῦ εἰσερχομένη.

other

not

not a meer *Rasa Tabula*, a Naked and Passive Thing, which has no innate Furniture or Activity of its own, nor any thing at all in it, but what was impressed upon it without ; for if it were so, then there could not possibly be any such Thing as Moral Good and Evil, Just and Unjust ; Forasmuch as these Differences do not arise meerly from the outward Objects, or from the Impresses which they make upon us by Sense, there being no such Thing in them ; in which Sense it is truly affirmed by the Author of the *Leviathan*, Page 24. *That there is no common Rule of Good and Evil to be taken from the Nature of the Objects themselves*, that is, either considered absolutely in themselves, or Relatively to external Sense only, but according to some other interior Analogy which Things have to a certain inward Determination in the Soul it self, from whence the Foundation of all this Difference must needs arise, as I shall shew afterwards ; Not that the Anticipations of Morality spring meerly from intellectual Forms and notional Idea's of the Mind, or from certain Rules or Propositions, arbitrarily printed upon the Soul as upon a Book, but from some other

other more inward, and vital Principle, in intellectual Beings, as such, whereby they have a natural Determination in them to do some Things, and to avoid others, which could not be, if they were meer naked Passive Things. Wherefore since the Nature of Morality cannot be understood, without some Knowledge of the Nature of the Soul, I thought it seasonable and requisite here to take this Occasion offered, and to prepare the Way to our following Discourse, by shewing in general, that the Soul is not a meer Passive and Receptive Thing, which hath no innate active Principle of its own, Because upon this Hypothesis there could be no such Thing as Morality.

5. AGAIN, I have the rather insisted upon this Argument also, because that which makes Men so inclinable to think that Justice, Honesty and Morality are but thin, airy and phantastical Things, that have little or no Entity or Reality in them besides Sensuality, is a certain Opinion in Philosophy which doth usually accompany it, that Matter and Body are the first Original and Source of all Things; that there is no Incorporeal Substance superiour to Matter,

Matter and independent upon it : And therefore that sensible Things are the only real and substantial Things in Nature ; but Souls and Minds springing secondarily out of Body, that Intellectuality and Morality which belong unto them, are but thin and evanid Shadows of sensible and corporeal Things, and not natural, but artificial and factitious Things that do as it were border upon the Confines of Non-Entity.

6. This is a Thing excellently well observed by *Plato*, and therefore I shall set down his Words at large concerning it.

¶ " These Men making this Distribution of

U

" Things

¶ Λέγετοι τις τινὲς ὡς πάντα ἵνα τὰ πρόγυματα τὰ μὲν φύσει, τὰ δὲ τέχνῃ, τὰ δὲ οὐχὶ τύχην. Εἴσικε δὲ Φασὶ, τὰ μὲν μέγιστα ἀνταῦ καὶ καλλισταὶ ἀπεργάζεσθαι φύσιν Εἰ τόχην, τὰ δὲ σμικρότερα τέχνην. Πᾶν δὲ παρὰ φύσιν λαμβάνεται τὸν τῶν μεράλων Εἰ πρόταν γένεσιν ἔργων πλάστειν καὶ τεκτανεῖν πάντα τὰ σμικρότερα, οὐ δὲ τεχνικὴ πάντες προταγορίσιμοιν. Ωδὲ, ἵτι σαφέσσερον ἔρα. Πῦρ καὶ ὄδοιρ καὶ γῆς καὶ οἴκων φύσιν πάντα ἔναιι Εἰ τόχη Φασὶ, τέχνη δὲ οὐδὲν τύταν. καὶ τὰ μετὰ τῶντα ἀνα σώματα γῆς τε καὶ ήλιος καὶ σελήνης ἀστραν τε πάρι, οὐχὶ τύταν γεγονόνται ταντελῶς ὅνται ἀψύχων. Τόχη δὲ φρεσμόνται τῇ τῆς διπλάσεως ἔκατον ἔκάτον, οὐ διπλάσιαν αἴριστονται ὀπίσιοις πᾶς θερμὸς ψυχροῖς. οὐ ξηρὰ πρὸς ὄγρα, Εἰ μαλακὰ πρὸς σκληρῶν καὶ πάντα ὀπότα τῇ τῶν ἴνατιον πράγη κατὰ τόχην οὐκ ἀπάργηται συνεργάσθη. Ταῦτη Εἰ κατὰ τῶντα ὅτα γεγενηκένται τούς τα δημιουροὺς οὐλοὺς Εἰ πάντα ὀπότα κατ' ὄγρατον. Εἰ ζῶσι ἀν καὶ φυτὰ ζύμησιται οὐλῶν πατῶν οὐκ τύταν γεγενημένων οὐ οὐχὶ τοῦ Φασίν, οὐδὲ οὐχὶ τοῦ Φασίν, οὐδὲ δια τέχνην, ἀλλὰ ἐ λόγοιν φύσει καὶ τόχη. Τέχνη δὲ οὐται.

" Things, that all Things that are, are either by Nature, or Art, or Chance, they  
 " imagine that the greatest and most excellent Things that are in the World,  
 " are to be attributed to Nature and Chance;  
 " which working upon those greater Things  
 " which are made by Nature, does form and  
 " fabricate certain smaller Things afterward,  
 " which we commonly call artificial Things.  
 " To speak more plainly, Fire, Water,  
 " Air, and Earth, they attribute wholly to  
 " Nature and Chance, but not to any Art  
 " or Wisdom; in like manner those Bodies  
 " of the Earth, the Sun, Moon and Stars,  
 " they will have to be made out of them  
 " fortuitously agitated; and so by Chance  
 " causing both divers Systems and  
 " Compages of Things: thus they would  
 " have the whole Heavens made, and all  
 " the Earth and Animals, and all the Seas  
 " sons of the Year, not by any Mind In-  
 " tellect, or God, not by any Art or Wis-

ροι οι τότεν ὑπόρου γενερέσιοι ἀυτοί θεττοί οἱ θεττοί, ὑπέρ γε-  
 γενηκέσι ποιοδίαις τίναις, ἀληθέσις οὐ σφόδρα μετεχόντος, ἀλλ' ἐπωλεῖς  
 ἄτται συγχρητικοῖς ιαντταῖς οὐκον οὐταῖς Ε Μητρική, Ε ὅνται τούτοις  
 οὐτι συνέργοι τέχναις οὐται δι την πομπειούσια πάσαι οὐ φύσαι,  
 τέχνη δέ, ης οὐκ ἀληθεῖς θίναι τὰς θέσεις.

“ dom, but all by blind Nature and Chance.  
“ But Art and Mind afterwards springing  
“ up out of these, to have begotten cer-  
“ tain ludicrous Things, which have little  
“ Truth and Reality in them, but are like  
“ Images in a Glass, such as Picture and  
“ Musick produces. Wherefore these Men  
“ attribute all Ethicks, Politicks, Morality  
“ and Laws, not to Nature, but to Art,  
“ whose Productions are not real and sub-  
“ stantial.”

7. Now this Philosopher, that he may  
evince that Ethicks, Politicks and Morality  
are as real and substantial Things, and as  
truly natural as those Things which be-  
long to Matter, he endeavours to shew  
that Souls and Minds do not spring se-  
condarily out of Matter and Body, but  
that they are real Things in Nature, su-  
perior and antecedent to Body and Mat-  
ter. His Words are these: <sup>1</sup> “ These  
“ Men are all ignorant concerning the

1 Φυχὴν δὲ ἑταῖρος ἀγωνίκας καθοικίνοις μὲν ὀλίγες ξύμπαντες, ὅτι το-  
ῦ τυγχάνει οὐδὲ πάρα πολὺ ἔχει, τὰν τε ἄλλων ἀντίς πέρ. Εἰ δὲ καὶ  
γενέσεις ἡσάν τούτοις ἐστι συμβάτην ἐμπροσθετούσαν γενομένην, Εἰ  
μεταβολῆς τε ἀντανήκη μετακομίζεταις αἰτάσης ἔργη πάντες  
μᾶλλον.

“ Nature of Mind and Soul, as in other  
 “ Regards, so especially in respect of its  
 “ Original, as it is in order of Nature  
 “ before Matter and Body, and does not  
 “ result out of it; but does command it,  
 “ govern it, and rule it.”

AND I have in like manner in this antecedent Discourse, endeavoured to shew that Wisdom, Knowledge, Mind and Intellect, are no thin Shadows or Images of corporeal and sensible Things, nor do result secondarily out of Matter and Body, and from the Activity and Impressions thereof; but have an independent and self-subsistent Being, which in order of Nature, is before Body; all particular created Minds being but derivative Participations of one Infinite Eternal Mind, which is antecedent to all corporeal Things.

Now from hence it naturally follows, that those Things which belong to Mind and Intellect, such as Morality, Ethicks, Politicks and Laws are, which *Plato* calls, *The Offspring and Productions of Mind*, are no less to be accounted natural Things, or real and substantial, than those Things

*Νέα γεννηματα ειχεν τοιον φορει οντας η φύσεως.*

which

which belong to stupid and senseless Matter: For since Mind and Intellect are first in order of Nature before Matter and Body, those Things which belong to the Mind must needs be in order of Nature before those Things which belong to the Body. <sup>“</sup> Wherefore Mind and Intellect, Art and Law, Ethics and Morality are first in order of Nature, before Hard and Soft, Light and Heavy, Long and Broad, which belong to Body; and therefore more real and substantial Things. For since Mind and Intellect are a higher, more real and substantial Thing than senseless Body and Matter, and what hath far the more Vigour, Activity and Entity in it, Modifications of Mind and Intellect, such as Justice and Morality, must of Necessity be more real and substantial Things, than the Modifications of mere senseless Matter, such as Hard and Soft, Thick and Thin, Hot and Cold, and the like are. And therefore that grave Philosopher ex-

<sup>ε</sup> Λόγος ὃν ἡ ἀνάγκη τὰ φύσει συγγενῆ πρότερα ἢ τὸ γεγονότα τῶν σώματι προσηκόντων, ὅπις ταῦτης προσεντήσας ἡ σώματος, τοῦτο τέχνη καὶ νόμος ἐ τρόπῳ καὶ ἵβῃ σκληρῶν ἐ μαλακῶν, βαρίσαι καὶ κόνφαται, μηκοῦς συμμεταν καὶ πλατεύς περιτέραι.

excellently well concludes, "that the greatest and first Works and Actions are of Art or of Mind, which were before Body; but those Things which are said to be by Nature (in which they abuse the Word Nature, appropriating it only to sensible and inanimate Matter) are afterwards, being governed by Mind and Art."

9. WHEREFORE I thought our former Discourse seasonable to confute the Dulness and Grossness of those Philosophasters that make corporeal Things existing without the Soul, to be the only solid and substantial Things, and make their grossest external Senses the only Judges of Reality of Things, "and so conclude nothing is or has any Reality but what they can grasp in their Hands, or have some gross or palpable Sense of."

WHEREAS notwithstanding it is most true that those corporeal Qualities, which they think to be such Real Things exist-

ταῦτα μεγάλα καὶ πρώτα ἔργα καὶ πράξεις πέχυνται ἀνίστητο  
οὐταὶ σε πρώτοι, περὶ δὲ Φύσεις καὶ Φύσις ( οὐδὲ οὐδέποτε ἐπονομάζεται ) ἀντὸ τοῦτο, ὑπερα καὶ αρχόμενα ἀντὶ τοῦ πέχυνται καὶ νοῦ.

Οἱ δὲ μέλλοντες θεῖαι οὐδὲ μόνον ταῖς αὐτρίζ ταῖς χρεοῖ  
λαβεῖσθαι.

ing in Bodies without them, are for the most part fantastick and imaginary Things, and have no more Reality than the Colours of the Rainbow; and as Plotinus expresseth it, "have no Reality at all in the Objects without us, but only a seeming Kind of Entity in our own Fancies;" and therefore are not absolutely any Thing in themselves, but only relative to Animals. So that they do in a manner mock us, when we conceive of them as Things really existing without us, being nothing but our own Shadows, and the vital passive Energies of our own Souls.

THOUGH it was not the Intention of God or Nature to abuse us herein, but a most wise Contrivance thus to beautify and adorn the visibled and material World, to add Lustre or Imbellishment to it, that it might have Charms, Relishes and Allurements in it, to gratify our Appetites; Whereas otherwise really in it self, the whole corporeal World in its naked Hue, is nothing else but a Heap of Dust or Atoms, of several Figures and Magnitudes,

<sup>11</sup> Καὶ σὺ εὐ τοῖς ψευτεῖσιν, ἀλλ' εὐ τοῖς τάδεσιν οὐχεὶς τῷ ποσεῖσιν.

296 *Concerning Eternal and*

variously agitated up and down; so that these Things, which we look upon as such real Things without us, are not properly the Modifications of Bodies themselves, but several Modifications, Passions and Affections of our own Souls.

¶. NEITHER are these passive and sympathetical Energies of the Soul, when it acts confusedly with the Body and the Pleasures resulting from them, such real and substantial things as those that arise from the pure noetical Energies of the Soul it self Intellectually and Morally; for since the Mind and Intellect is in it self a more real and substantial Thing, and fuller of Entity than Matter and Body, those Things which are *\* the pure Offspring of the Mind*, and sprout from the Soul it self, must needs be more real and substantial than those Things which blossom from the Body, or from the Soul infeebled by it, and slumbering in it.

¶. WHEREFORE that Philosopher professing and understanding to confute Atheists, and to shew, *\* That all Atheists, though they*

*\* οὐ οὐν γεννήσατο.*

*\* Τοὺς λόγους μεταρρίψεις ἀτεβούμενοι τοῖς λόγοις ἀλλ' ἀλλημετρημένοις χρεοῦσι.* *metaxw metrētikos logos* *metaxw metrētikos logos*

*pretend*

pretend to Wit never so much, are but Bunglers at Reason, and sorry Philosophers, He, not without Cause, fetches his Discourse from hence, that <sup>a</sup> “ They that thus infect Mens Minds with Impiety and Atheism, make that which is the first Cause of all Generation and Corruption, to be the last Thing in the Universe, and that which is the last to be the first: From hence proceeds their Errour concerning the Being of God;” that is, they make Mind and Soul to be the last Thing, and Body and Matter to be the first.

THIS therefore is the only Course and Method which this Philosopher proceeds in to confute the Atheists; to shew, <sup>b</sup> “ That Mind and Soul, in the Order of the Universe, are before Body, and not posterior to it; Mind and Soul being that which rules in the Universe, and Body that which is ruled and ordered by it.”

And there is no Phenomenon in the World but may be salved from this Hypothesis.

<sup>a</sup> Ότι δὲ πρῶτον καίστως καὶ θερέας ἀγίτου αἰράτου, τοῦτο οὐ πρῶτον ἀλλ' ὑπερον ἀπεφῆγαντο ἵνα γεγονός οἱ την ταν ἀστεβῶν ψυχὴν ἀπεργασάμενοι λόγοι, οἱ δὲ ὑπερον πρότερον, ὅθεν ἡμαρτηκασι πάρα θεῶν τὸ ἄντες ὄντες.

<sup>b</sup> Ψυχὴν μὲν προτέραν γεγονέας θάμνων, σῶμα δὲ διατέρον τε καὶ ὑπερον, ψυχῆς αρχόντος αρχόμενον καπὲ φύσιν.

Now

Now this he demonstrates, even from local Motion, because Body and Matter has no self-moving Power, and therefore it is moved and determined in its Motion by a higher Principle, a Soul or Mind; which Argument is further improved by the Author of that excellent philosophical Treatise, *Book II. Chap. II.*

12. Now, for the self-same Cause, I have endeavoured to demonstrate in the foregoing Discourse, that Knowledges and Intellection cannot possibly spring from Sense, nor the Radiation or Impresses of Matter and Body upon that which knows, but from an active Power of the Mind, as a Thing antecedent to Matter, and independent upon it, whereby it is enabled from within itself to exert intelligible Ideas of all Things.

13. LASTLY, I have insisted the rather so largely upon this Argument, for this further Reason also, because it is not possible that there should be any such Thing as Morality, unless there be a God, that is, an Infinite Eternal Mind that is the first Original and Source of all Things, whose Nature is the first Rule and Exemplar of Morality; for otherwise it is not conceivable, whence any such Thing should

be derived to particular Intellectual Beings. Now there can be no such Thing as God, if stupid and senseless Matter be the first Original of all Things; and if all Being and Perfection that is found in the World, may spring up and arise out of the dark Womb of unthinking Matter; but if Knowledge and Understanding, if Soul, Mind and Wisdom may result and emerge out of it, then doubtless every thing that appears in the World may; and so Night, Matter, and Chaos, must needs be the first and only Original of all Things.

14. WHEREFORE *Plato*, as I have already intimated, taking Notice of the Opinion of divers Pretenders to Philosophy, <sup>c</sup> “ That Fire, Water, Air and Earth, are the first Beings of all, to which senseless and inanimate Things they appropriate the Title of Nature: But that Soul did spring up afterward out of these as a secondary Thing,” and as a meer Shadow of them, he immediately adds concerning it, <sup>d</sup> “ We have here found

<sup>c</sup> Πῦρ καὶ ὕδωρ καὶ γῆ, καὶ ἄερις πρῶτα ἴγενος τὸν πάγτων ἔνας καὶ τὰ φύσιν ὀνομάζειν τάντα αὐτοῦ, Φυχὴ δὲ ἐκ τυτῶν ὑστερον.

<sup>d</sup> Οιον, τάκην τινὰ κενοῦται δίξης ἀνευρύσκειν ἀνθρώπινον ὄποσον πάζοτε τῶν πιεῖ φύσεως ἴφηψατο ζητησάταν.

*Concerning Eternal and*

“ and discovered the true Fountain of all  
“ that atheistical Madness that possesses most  
“ of those that deal in Physiology or  
“ Questions of Natural Philosophy,” viz.  
That they are all possessed with this Sot-  
tishness, that Matter and Body is the first  
Original of all Things; and therefore it  
is observed by the same Author, that the  
same Persons that held all Things were  
derived from Body, Blind Nature and  
Chance, did both deny the Existence of  
God, and which is consentaneous there-  
unto, asserted, that Justice and Morality  
have no Nature or Entity at all, saying,  
they were nothing but Passion from Cor-  
poreal Things, without the Sentient or the  
Renitence, or the Reaction made upon lo-  
cal Motion in a Body duly mixed and  
tempered: that is, if Soul and Mind,  
Knowledge and Wisdom may thus arise  
from the Contemplation of meer sense-  
less Matter, and Radiation or Impression  
that is the meer local Motion of corpo-  
real Objects without, then, as we said be-  
fore, there cannot possibly be the least  
Shadow of Argument left to prove a Dei-  
ty by; since not only the Souls of Men,  
but also all that Wisdom, Counsel and

Contri-

Contrivance that appears in the Frame of the whole visible World, might first arise in like manner from the meer casual Concourse and Contemperation of the whole Matter; either in those particular Bodies of the Sun and Stars, or else in the whole System and Compagies of the material World it self.

15. WHEREFORE we have not only shewed that all Intellection and Knowledge does not emerge or emanate out of Sense, but also that Sense it self is not a meer Passion or Reception of corporeal Impresses without, but that it is an active Energy and Vigour, though sympathetical in the Sentient. And it is no more possible that this should arise out of senseless Matter and Atoms, by reason of any peculiar Contemperation or Contexture of them in respect of Figure, Site, and Motion, than that which all Atheists stoutly deny, that something should arise out of nothing.

AND here we can never sufficiently applaud that antient atomical Philosophy, so successfully revived of late by *Cartesius*, in that it shews distinctly what Matter is, and what it can amount unto, namely, nothing

3  
Court-  
Without Counting any  
but those who only the  
sorts of Men

nothing else but what may be produced from meer Magnitude, Figure, Site, local Motion, and Rest; from whence it is demonstrably evident and mathematically certain, that no Cogitation can possibly arise out of the Power of Matter; whereas that other Philosophy which brings in a dark unintelligible Matter that is nothing and every thing, out of whose Potentiality not only innumerable Qualities, but also substantial Forms and sensitive Souls, (and therefore why not rational also, since all Reason emerges out of Sense) may be deduced, must of necessity perpetually brood and hatch Atheism. Whereas we cannot but extremely admire that monstrous Dotage and Sottishnes of *Epicurus*, and some other spurious Pretenders to this Atomical Philosophy, that notwithstanding they acknowledge nothing else in Matter besides Magnitude, Figure, Site, and Motion, yet would make not only the Power of Sensation, but also of Intellection and Ratiocination, and therefore all human Souls, to arise from the mere Contixture of corporeal Atoms, and utterly explode all incorporeal Substances; than which

which two Assertions nothing can be more contradictory. And this is far more absurd, to make Reason and Intellection to arise from Magnitude, Figure and Motion, than to attribute those unintelligible Qualities to Matter which they explode.

**F I N I S.**



BOOKS Printed for JAMES and JOHN KNAPTON,  
at the Crown in St. Paul's Church-Yard, London.

**A** Defence of Christianity from the Prophecies of the Old Testament: Wherein are consider'd all the Objections against this Kind of Proof, advanced in a late Discourse of the *Grounds and Reasons of the Christian Religion*. By the Right Reverend Father in God *Edward Lord Bishop of Durham*. The Third Edition, 8vo.

A Vindication of the Defence of Christianity from the Prophecies of the Old Testament: In Answer to the Scheme of Literal Prophecy consider'd. In two Vols. With a Letter from the Reverend Mr. *Masson*, concerning the Religion of *Macrobius*, and his Testimony touching the Slaughter of the Infants at *Bethlehem*. With a Postscript upon *Virgil's* fourth Eclogue. By the Right Reverend Father in God *Edward Lord Bishop of Durham*.

A Vindication of the Miracles of our Blessed Saviour: In which the Passages cited out of the Fathers in Mr. *Woolston's* Five Discourses on those Miracles are particularly examined, and it is evinced that he has grossly misrepresented the Fathers, and that they all believed those Miracles in the Literal Sense. Together with an Answer to his other Objections against the Literal Sense of those Miracles. By the Right Reverend Father in God *Richard Lord Bishop of St. David's*. 2d Edition.

A Discourse concerning the *Being and Attributes of God*, the Obligations of Natural Religion, and the Truth and Certainty of the *Christian Revelation*: In Answer to Mr. *Hobbes*, *Spinoza*, the *Author of the Oracles of Reason*, and other Deniers of Natural and Revealed Religion. Being Sixteen Sermons, preached at the Cathedral Church of St. *Paul*, in the Years 1704 and 1705, at the Lecture founded by the Honourable *Robert Boyle Esq*; The Seventh Edition corrected. There is inserted in this Edition, a Discourse concerning the *Connexion of the Prophecies in the Old Testament*, and the Application of them to *Christ*. There is also added, an Answer to a seventh Letter, concerning the Argument *a priori*. By *Samuel Clarke*, D. D. late Rector of St. *James's Westminster*.

The History of the Reformation, and other Ecclesiastical Transactions, in and about the *Low-Countries*, from the Beginning of the Eighth Century, down to the famous Synod of *Dordt*, inclusive; By the Rev. and Learned Mr. *Gerard Brandt*, late Professor of Divinity, and Minister to the Protestant Remonstrants at *Amsterdam*. Translated from the Original *Low-Dutch*. With the Heads of the most eminent Persons, engraven by Mr. *Vertue*. In four Volumes Folio.

N. B. The Subscribers to this Work, who have not yet compleated their Books, may have the Volumes they want of Large or Small Paper, upon the Terms of the Subscription.

8